| **Speaker** | **Text** | **Music** | **Sound Effects** | **Time** |
| --- | --- | --- | --- | --- |
| **Chapter / Episode 1 – The Cause: 1861** | | | | |
| Oliver Wendall Holmes –  Actor | “We have shared the incommunicable experience of war. We felt, we still feel, the passion of life to its top. In our youths, our hearts were touched with fire.”  Oliver Wendell Holmes |  |  | 00:00:00 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | By the summer of 1861 Wilber McLean had had enough.  Two great armies were converging on his farm.  In what would be the first major battle of the Civil War, Bull Run, or Manassas is a Confederates called it, would soon rage across the aging Virginian’s farm. A Union shell going so far as to explode in the summer kitchen.  Now McLean moved his family away from Manassas, far south and west of Richmond, out of harm’s way he prayed, to a dusty little crossroads called Appomattox Courthouse.  And it was there, in his living room, three and half years later, that Lee surrendered to Grant.  Wilber McLean, could rightfully say, the war began in my front yard and ended in my front parlor.  The Civil War was fought in 10,000 places.  From Val Verde, New Mexico and Telahoma, Tennessee, to St. Albens, Vermont and Fernandina on the Florida coast.  More than 3 million Americans fought in it, and over 600,000 men, two percent of the population, died in it.  American homes became headquarters. American churches and schoolhouses sheltered the dying, and huge forging armies swept across American farms, and burned American towns.  Americans slaughtered one other wholesale, here in America, in their own cornfields and peach orchards, along familiar roads and by waters with old American names.  In two days at Shiloh, on the banks of the Tennessee, more American men fell than in all previous American wars combined.  In Cold Harbor, 7000 Americans fell in 20 minutes.  Men who had never strayed 20 miles from their own front doors, now found themselves soldiers in great armies, fighting epic battles hundreds of miles from home.  They knew they were making history, and it was the greatest adventure of their lives.  The war made some rich, ruined others, and changed forever the lives of all who lived through it.  A lackluster clerk from Galena, Illinois, a failure at everything except marriage and war, who in three years would be head of the Union Army, and in seven, President of the United States.  An eccentric student of theology and military tactics, a hypochondriac, who in the battle would ride with one hand raised, to keep, he said, the blood balanced. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | A college professor from Maine, who on a little hill in Pennsylvania, ordered an unlikely textbook maneuver, to save the Union Army and possibly the union itself.  Two ordinary soldiers, one from Providence Rhode Island, the other from Columbia Tennessee, who each served four years, and together seemed to have been everywhere during the war, and lived to tell the tale.  The courtly, unknowable, aristocrat, who disapproved of secession and slavery, yet went on to defend them both, at the head of one of the greatest armies of all time.  The runaway boy, who stole himself from slavery, recruited two regiments of black soldiers, and helped transform the Civil War into a struggle for the freedom of all Americans.  And then there was a rough man from Illinois, would rise to be the greatest president the country has ever seen.  Between 1961 in 1865, Americans made war on each other, and killed each other, in great numbers, if only to become the kind of country, that could no longer conceive how that was possible.  What began as a bitter dispute over union and state’s rights, ended as a struggle over the meaning of freedom in America.  At Gettysburg in 1863, Abraham Lincoln said perhaps more than he knew. The war was about a new birth of freedom. |  |  | 00:05:27 |
| Newsreel  Narrator | 1938, 75th anniversary of the battle of Gettysburg, President Roosevelt spoke to the remaining few Civil War veterans:  “Veterans of the Blue and the Gray, on behalf of the people of the United States, I accept this monument, in the spirit of brotherhood and peace.”  Year after year the nation remembered.  In 1930, veterans of the Union Army marched in Cincinnati, Ohio.  Four years later in New York City.  They, and the surviving veterans of the Confederacy, were the last link with the terrible conflict that tore America apart from 1861 to 1865.  The last Civil War veteran would die in 1959, and no longer would there be living memories of long ago battles. Only history, and legends. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | Any understanding of this nation, has to be based, and I mean really based, on an understanding of the Civil War. I believe that firmly. It defined us.  The Revolution did what it did. Our involvement in European wars, beginning with the First World War, did what it did. But the Civil War defined us as what we are, and it opened us, to being what we became, good and bad things, and it is very necessary if you going to understand the American character in the 20th century, to learn about this enormous catastrophe in the mid-19th century.    It was the crossroads of our being, and it was a hell of a crossroads. |  |  |  |
| Barbara Fields -  Historian | For me, a picture of the Civil War, as an historic phenomena, is not on the battlefield, its not about weapons, it’s not about soldiers, except to the extent that weapons and soldiers, at the crucial moment, joined a discussion about something higher. About humanity, about human dignity, about human freedom. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln –  Actor | “Whence shall we expect the approach of danger? Shall some transatlantic giant step the earth and crush us at a blow? Never. All the armies of Europe and Asia, could not by force, take a drink from the Ohio River, or make a track on the Blue Ridge, in the trial of a thousand years. If destruction be our lot, we must ourselves be its author, and finisher. As a nation of free men, we will live forever, or die by suicide.”  Abraham Lincoln - 1837 |  |  | 00:09:39 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In 1861 most of the nation’s 31 million people live peaceably on farms and in small towns.  At Sharpsburg, Maryland a German pacifist sect, the Dunkards, made their home in a sea of wheat and corn.  In Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, population 2400, young men studied Latin and mathematics at the small college there.  Steamboats, filled with cotton, came and went at Vicksburg, on the Mississippi.  In Washington, DC, Senator Jefferson Davis reviewed plans for remodeling the capital.  In Richmond, the 900 employees of the Tredegar Ironworks, turned out gun carriages and cannon for the US government.  At West Point on the Hudson, officers trained, and friendships were formed they thought would last a lifetime. |  |  |  |
| Frederick Douglass - Actor | “In thinking of America, I sometimes find myself admiring her bright blue sky, her grand old woods, her fertile fields, her beautiful rivers, her mighty lakes and star crowned mountains. But my rapture is soon checked, when I remember that all is cursed, with the infernal spirit of slaveholding and wrong. When I remember that with the waters of her noblest rivers, the tears of my brethren are born to the ocean disregarded and forgotten. That her most fertile fields drink daily of the warm blood of my outraged sisters. I am filled with unutterable loathing.”    Frederick Douglass |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | No day ever dawns for the slave, a freed black man wrote. Nor is it looked for. For the slave, it is all night. All night, forever.  One white Mississippian was more blunt: “I’d rather be dead, he said, than be a niger on one of these big plantations.”  A slave entered the world in a one room, dirt floored, shack. Drafty in winter, reeking in summer, slave cabins spread pneumonia, typhus, cholera, lockjaw, tuberculosis.  A child who survived to be sent to the fields at 12, was likely to have rotten teeth, worms, dysentery, malaria. Fewer than four out of a hundred lived to be 60.  Work began at sunrise and continued as long as there was light. Fourteen hours sometimes, unless there was a full moon, when it went on still longer.  On the auction block, blacks were made to jump and dance to demonstrate their sprightliness, and stripped to show how little whipping they needed.    Buyers poked and prodded them, examined their feet, eyes and teeth, precisely, one ex-slave recalled, as a jockey examines a horse. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | A slave could expect to be sold at least once in his lifetime, maybe two times, maybe more.  Since slave marriages had no legal status, preachers changed the wedding vows, to read until death or distance do you part. |  |  | 00:15:33 |
| Former Slave  Actor | “You know what I’d rather do? If I thought, that I’d ever be a slave again, I’d take a gun and end it all right away. Because your nothing but a dog. You’re not a thing but a dog.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Some slaves refused to work. Some ran away.  Still blacks struggled to hold their families together, created their own culture, under the worst of conditions, and yearned to be free. |  |  |  |
| Barbara Fields  Historian | “If there was a single event that caused the war, it was the establishment of the United States in independence from Great Britain with slavery still a part of its heritage.” |  |  |  |
| Shelby Foote  Historian | “It was because we failed to do the thing we really have a genius for, which is compromise.  Americans like to think of themselves as uncompromising.  Our true genius is that we compromise, our whole government is founded upon it, and it failed.” |  |  |  |
| John Chapman - Actor | “It was never a moment in our history when slavery was not sleeping serpent. It lay coiled up under the table during the deliberations of the Constitutional convention. Owing to the cotton gin it was more than half awake. Thereafter, slavery was on everyone’s mind, though not always on his tongue.”  John J. Chapman |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | By the time the nation was founded, slavery was dying in the north. There were doubts in the south too, but few could conceive of any alternative.  Thomas Jefferson of Virginia said, “maintaining slavery was like holding a wolf by the ears. You didn’t like it, but you didn’t dare let it go.”  Then in 1793, a northerner, Eli Whitney, taught the south how to make slavery pay.  Whitney’s engine or gin made it easier to separate cotton from its seed.  Where before it taken one slave 10 hours to produce a single pound of lint, the cotton gin could crank out 1000 pounds a day.  Production soared, and with it the demand for slaves.  By 1860, the last year of peace, one out of every seven Americans belonged to another American. Four million men, women and children were slaves.  In Boston, in 1831, claiming that which is not just, is not law, William Lloyd Garrison began publishing a militant, antislavery newspaper, The Liberator. He called for complete and immediate abolition. |  |  |  |
| William Lloyd Garrison – Actor | “I am in earnest. I will not equivocate. I will not excuse. I will not retreat a single inch, and I will be heard.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | He was heard, and his message was clear. Slavery was sin, and those who maintained it, criminals.  The abolition movement grew, inspired by passionate leaders. Harriet Tubman, called Moses by the slaves, who followed her north to freedom.  Wendell Phillips, named the golden trumpet of abolitionism for his oratory, and Frederick Douglass, the son of a slave and a white man |  |  | 00:19:56 |
| Frederick Douglass –  Actor | “I appear this evening as a thief and robber. I stole this head, these limbs, this body, from my master, and ran off with them.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Douglas was so eloquent that skeptics charged he could never have been a slave. In part to prove them wrong, he wrote an autobiography, purchased his freedom with $600 obtained from English admirers, and returned to the struggle. |  |  |  |
| John Calhoun –  Actor | “The abolitionists would raise the Negroes to a social and political equality with the whites, and that being affected, we would soon see the present condition of the two races reversed. They and their northern allies would be the masters and we the slaves.”  John C. Calhoun |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | More and more, southerners worried about the growing political, as well as economic power, of the north.  Northerners were increasingly hostile to slavery. Still, most Southerners refused to acknowledge even the possibility of changing their way of life. |  |  |  |
| Alexis  de Tocqueville - Actor | “On the north bank of the Ohio, everything is activity, industry. Labor is honored. There are no slaves. Pass to the south bank, and the scene changes so suddenly that you think yourself on the other side of the world. The enterprising spirit is gone.”  Alexis de Tocqueville |  |  |  |
| Mary  Chesnut –  Actor | “We are separated because of incompatibility of temper. We are divorced, north from south, because we hated each other so.”  Mary Chesnut |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On the clear, moonlit night on November 7, 1837, a mob surrounded a warehouse at Alton, Illinois, intent on destroying an antislavery newspaper run by the Reverend Elijah P. Lovejoy.  When one of the mob moved to set the building on fire, Lovejoy armed with a pistol, came out to stop him.  The slavery men shot him dead, and dumped his printing press into the Mississippi.  The news stunned the nation. A white man had been killed over black slavery.    Protest meetings were held throughout the north.  One abolitionist wrote: “The thousands of our citizens, who lately believed that they had nothing to do with slavery, now begin to discover their error.”  In Hudson, Ohio, a clergyman told a church gathering: “The question now before us is no longer can slaves be made free, but are we free, or are we slaves under mob law?” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In the back of the church, a strange gaunt man rose to his feet and raised his right hand. |  |  | 00:23:23 |
| John Brown - Actor | “Here before God, in the presence of these witnesses, I consecrate my life to the destruction of slavery.”  John Brown |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In 1846, a lawyer from Springfield, Illinois was elected to Congress.  He was born in Kentucky, the son of a farmer, who could barely sign his name.    He became a legislator at 24, a prosperous attorney, and after a turbulent courtship, the husband of Miss Mary Todd, the daughter of a slaveholding Kentucky, banker.  For Abraham Lincoln, the Declaration of Independence was to be taken literally.  All men had the right to rise as far as talent would take them, just as he had.  He detested slavery, but he called for its restriction, not immediate abolition.  By mid-century the country was deeply divided.  Southerners fear the north might forbid slavery, northerners feared slavery might move west. As each new state was added to the union, it threatened to upset the delicate equilibrium of power. |  |  |  |
| Henry Adams - Actor | “There are grave doubts the hugeness of the land, and whether one government can comprehend the whole.”  Henry Adams |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Now events accelerated.  In 1852 and Harriet Beecher Stowe published uncle Tom’s cabin. Its portrayal of slavery’s cruelty move readers as nothing else had.  Queen Victoria wept over it.  Within a year, more than a million and a half copies were in print, world- wide.  In 1854 Congress allowed settlers in the Kansas and Nebraska territories to decide for themselves whether or not to permit slavery.  Kansas exploded.  Five thousand pro-slavery men invaded the territory.  Within three months, 200 men died in bleeding Kansas.  The killing would not stop for ten years.  In 1857 the Supreme Court refused to free a slave, Dred Scott, even though he lived for many years on free soil.  Chief Justice Roger B. Taney said, “A black man had no rights a white man was bound to respect.” |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln - Actor | “As a nation we began by declaring that all men are created equal. We now practically read it, all men are created equal except Negroes. Soon, it will read all men are created equal except Negroes, and foreigners and Catholics. When it comes to this I should prefer emigrating to some country where they make no pretense of loving liberty. To Russia for instance, where despotism can be taken pure, and without the base alloy of hypocrisy.”  Abraham Lincoln |  |  | 00:26:18 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Violence reached the floor of the United States Senate, where Congressman Preston Brooks of South Carolina savagely beat abolitionist Senator Charles Sumner with his cane.  Southern sympathizers sent Brooks new canes.  Members began carrying knives and pistols into the chamber.  Meanwhile, the nation’s chief executive, James Buchanan, did nothing. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln - Actor | “A house divided against itself cannot stand. I believe this government cannot endure, permanently half slave and half free. I do not expect the union to be dissolved. I do not expect the house to fall. But I do expect it will cease to be divided. It will become all one thing or all the other.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On Sunday evening, October 16, 1859, the radical abolitionist John Brown, led five blacks and 13 whites into Harper’s Ferry, Virginia.  He brought along a wagon load guns to arm the slaves he was sure would rally to him.  Once they had, he planned to lead them southward, along the crest of the Appalachians, and destroy slavery.  Brown was an inept businessman, who failed 20 times in six states, and defaulted on his debts.  Yet he believed himself God’s agent on earth.  In 1856, at Pottawattamie Creek, in Kansas, he and his sons had hacked five pro-slavery men to death, with broadswords, all in the name of defeating Satan and his legions.  Brown and his men quietly seized the armory, arsenal and engine house, and took up hostages, including George Washington’s great grandnephew.  After that nothing went right.  The first person killed was the town baggage master, a free black.  The slaves did not rise up, angry townspeople did.  The first of Brown’s followers to fall was Dangerfield Newby, a former slave.  Someone in the crowd cut off his ears as souvenirs.  On Tuesday morning, federal troops arrived from Washington, led by a US Army Colonel, Robert E. Lee.  Lee’s men stormed the engine house, and nine more of Brown’s men were killed, including two of his sons.  Brown, severely wounded, was turned over to Virginia, to be tried for treason. |  |  |  |
| William Lloyd Garrison - Actor | “In firing his gun, John Brown has merely told what time of day it is. It is high noon. Thank God.”  William Lloyd Garrison |  |  | 00:29:55 |
| Editor, Albany Georgia Patriot – Actor | “An undivided south says let him hang”  Albany Georgia Patriot |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Virginia found Brown guilty and sentenced him to death.  Among the troops at the scene of his hanging were cadets from the Virginia Military Institute, led by an eccentric professor Thomas J. Jackson.  Also there was a private in the Richmond Grays. A young actor named John Wilkes Booth. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln - Actor | “December 2nd 1859. Old John Brown has been executed for treason against a state. We cannot object, even though he agreed with us in thinking slavery wrong. That cannot excuse violence, bloodshed and treason. It could avail him nothing that he might think himself right.”  Abraham Lincoln |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Ralph Waldo Emerson likened Brown to Christ.  Nathaniel Hawthorne declared “No man ever more justly hanged”, and Herman Melville called him the “meteor of the war”.  Brown had said nothing from the gallows. But he did hand one of his guards a note. |  |  |  |
| John Brown - Actor | “I John Brown am now quite certain that the crimes of this guilty land will never be purged away but with blood.” |  |  |  |
| Frederick Douglass - Actor | “His zeal in the cause of freedom was infinitely superior to mine. Mine was as the table light. His was as the burning sun. I could live for the slave. John Brown could die for him.” |  |  |  |
| Ed Bearss - Historian | “John Brown, John Brown, very important person in history. Important though for only one episode. Failure in everything in life. Except, he becomes the single most important factor in my opinion in bringing on the war. The militia system in the south which had been joke before this, before then, becomes a viable instrument. As the southern militias begin to take a true form, and the south begins to worry about northerners agitating the blacks to murder them in their beds.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | It was the beginning of the Confederate Army. |  |  |  |
| Alexander Stephens - Actor | “The feeling among the Southern members for dissolution of the Union is becoming more general. Men are now beginning to talk of it seriously who 12 months ago hardly permitted themselves to think of it. The crisis is not far ahead.”  Alexander Stephens |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The country was coming apart.  In the presidential election of 1860, Buchanan happily stepped aside, but not before his ruling Democratic Party was fatally split over the issue of slavery.  The Republicans, a new party, saw their chance, and nominated Abraham Lincoln, a moderate.  His platform pledged only to halt slavery’s further spread. |  |  | 00:33:23 |
| Abraham Lincoln - Actor | “On that point hold firm, as with a chain of steel. Those who deny freedom to others, deserve it not for themselves, and under a just God cannot long retain it.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Radical abolitionists in the north complained that Lincoln’s opposition to slavery did not go far enough.  But to most people in the south, the prospect of Lincoln’s election posed a lethal threat.  The 1860 campaign had become a referendum on the southern way of life.  On November 6, 1860, Abraham Lincoln won the presidency with only 40 percent of the vote.  He did not even appear on the ballot in 10 southern states. |  |  |  |
| Editor, Richmond Whig - Actor | “The election of Mr. Lincoln is undoubtedly the greatest evil that has ever befallen this country. But the mischief is done, and the only relief for the American people is to shorten sail, send down the top mast, and prepare for a hurricane.”  Richmond Whig |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In the south, Lincoln was burned in effigy.  Now the South Carolina legislature called for a convention to consider seceding from the union. |  |  |  |
| Shelby Foote  Historian | “Southerners would have told you that they were fighting for self government.  They believed that the gathering of power in Washington was against them.  When they entered into that federation, they certainly would never have entered into it if they hadn’t believed it was possible to get out.  And when the time came that they wanted to get out, they thought they had every right.  Southerners saw the election of Lincoln, as a sign that the union was about to be radicalized, and that they were about to be taken in directions they did not care to go.  The abolitionist aspect of it was very strong, and they figured they were about to lose what they called their property, and faced ruin” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Yet many southerners thought secession was madness.  South Carolina, one Southern politician wrote, is too small for Republic, and too large for an insane asylum. |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong - Actor | “November 19th 1860, a most gloomy day in Wall Street. Everything at a deadlock. First class paper not negotiable. Stocks failing.”  George Templeton Strong |  |  | 00:36:27 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In New York emotions were no less explosive, and George Templeton Strong, a conservative lawyer, who distrusted Lincoln, began to keep track of events in his diary. |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong - Actor | “The bird of our country as a debilitated chicken, disguised an eagle feathers. We have never been a nation, we are only an aggregate of communities, ready to fall apart at the first serious shock.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | When Abraham Lincoln was elected president, there were 33 states in the union, and a 34th, free Kansas, was about to join.  By the time of his inauguration, five months later, just 27 state would remain.  The suddenness of secession took everyone by surprise.  South Carolina led the way on December 20th.  A bell in Charleston told the succession of departing states.  Mississippi on January 9th.  Florida on the 10th.  Then Alabama, Georgia, Louisiana.  In Texas, Governor Sam Houston was deposed when he tried to stop his state from joining the Confederacy. |  |  |  |
| Sam Houston - Actor | “Let me tell what is coming. After the sacrifice of countless millions of treasure and hundreds of thousands of lives, you may win southern independence, but I doubt it.  The North is determined to preserve this Union.  They are not a fiery impulsive people as you, for they live in colder climates, but when they begin to move in a given direction they move with the steady momentum and perseverance of a mighty avalanche.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Texas left anyway.  Even Virginia, the most populous southern state, birthplace of seven presidents, seemed sure to follow. |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong - Actor | “All the indications are that this treasonable inflammation, secessionitius keeps on making steady progress week by week. If disunion becomes an established fact we have one consolation. The self amputated members were diseased beyond immediate cure and their virus will effect our system no longer”  George Templeton Strong. |  |  |  |
| Editor, Charleston Mercury - Actor | Charleston Mercury. “The tea has been thrown overboard. The Revolution of 1860 has been initiated.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | After South Carolina seceded, the handful of federal troops still stationed in Charleston, withdrew to Fort Sumter, far out in the harbor.  Their commander, Major Robert Anderson, said he had moved his men in order to prevent the effusion of blood.  They were quickly surrounded by rebel batteries. |  |  | 00:39:25 |
| Lucius Quintus Cincinnatus Lamar - Actor | “Thank God, we have a country at last. To live for, to pray for, and if need be, to die for.”  Lucius Quintus Lamar |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On February 18th, a few minutes after noon, Jefferson Davis stood on the steps of the Alabama State House in Montgomery, and took the oath of office as president of the Provisional Confederate States of America.  The crowds cheered, wept, sang fair well to the star spangled banner, and Dixie, a minstrel tune written by a northerner.  He was brittle, nervous, often unable to sleep, and partly blind in one eye.  Accustomed to being obeyed, he scorned the bargaining that made democratic government work.  Sam Houston said he was as cold as a lizard, and ambitious as Lucifer.  Like Lincoln, he was a Kentuckian, son of an itinerant farmer, but he had been educated at West Point, fought in Mexico, and served as secretary of war.  As Senator from Mississippi, he resisted secession as long as he could, but when his state withdrew from the union, he headed home to his plantation, Brierfield, south of Vicksburg.  He and his wife Varina were there, clipping roses in the garden, when word came that he had been elected president. |  |  |  |
| Varina Davis – Actress | “Reading that telegram he looked so grieved that I feared that some evil had befallen our family. After a few minutes he told me. As a man might speak of a sentence of death.” |  |  |  |
| Jefferson Davis – Actor | “Upon my head was showered flowers, plaudits and smiles, but beyond them I saw troubles innumerable.”  Jefferson Davis |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Confederate Constitution was almost identical to the United States Constitution.  But it gave the president a line-item veto, a six year term and it outlawed international slave trading.  The Confederate cabinet met for the first time in a hotel room.  A sheet of stationary pinned to the door marked the President’s office.  Where will I find the state department, a visitor asked Robert Tombs the Confederate Secretary of State. In my hat sir, and the archives in my coat pocket. |  |  |  |
| Alexander Stephens - Actor | “Our new government is founded upon the great truth that the Negro is not equal the white man”.  Vice President Alexander Stephens |  |  |  |
| Mary Chesnut - Actress | “God forgive us that ours is a monotonous system.  Like the patriarchs of old, our men live all in one house with their wives and their concubines, and the mulattoes one sees in every family exactly resemble the white children.  All the time they seem to think themselves patterns, models of husbands and fathers”.  Mary Chesnut |  |  | 00:42:43 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Mary Chesnut, and her husband James, a former United States Senator from South Carolina, moved among the highest circles of the Confederacy, and were close to Jefferson Davis and his wife.  Mary was subject to depressions and nightmares, for which she sometimes took opium.  Now, she too, began to keep a diary. |  |  |  |
| Mary Chesnut - Actress | “This journal is intended to be entirely objective. My subjective days are over.” |  |  |  |
| William Russell, London Times –  Actor | “ The impression produced by the size of his extremities, and by his flapping and wide projecting ears, may be removed by the appearance of kindliness, sagacity.  The nose itself, a prominent organ, stands out from the face with an inquiring, anxious air, as though it were sniffing for some good thing in the wind.  The eyes, dark, full and deeply set are penetrating, but full of an expression that almost amounts to tenderness.”  William Russell, London Times |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Two days after Jefferson Davis left home, Abraham Lincoln set out from Springfield, Illinois, for his capital. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln - Actor | “Here I have lived a quarter of a century, and passed from a young to an old man. Here my children have been born and one is buried.  I now leave, not knowing when or whether ever I may return.  With a task before me greater than that which rested upon Washington.  Without the assistance of that Devine Being, whoever attended him, I cannot succeed. With that assistance, I cannot fail.  To His care I am commending you, as I hope in your prayers you will commend me.  I bid you an affectionate farewell.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On route to Washington, the President’s train stopped at Cleveland, Buffalo, Albany and New York.  In Philadelphia, warned of plots to kill him, Lincoln declared that he would rather be assassinated, than see a single star removed from the American Flag.  Two days later he reluctantly cancelled plans for a grand arrival in Washington, and slipped into the capital by train, at dawn, wrapped in a shawl, and protected by two armed guards. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Inauguration day in Washington was cloudy and cold.  A large, tense crowd gathered beneath the unfinished dome.  Cannon guarded the capitol grounds. Sharpshooters lined the roof.  Lincoln promised not to interfere with slavery, denied the right of any state to succeed, vowed to defend federal installations, and spoke directly to the south. |  |  | 00:45:54 |
| Abraham Lincoln - Actor | “In your hands my dissatisfied countrymen, and not in mine, is the momentous issue of civil war.  The government will not assail you.  You can have no conflict, without being yourselves the aggressors.  We are not enemies but friends. We must not be enemies.  Though passion may have strained, it must not break our bonds of affection.  The mystic chords of memory, stretching from every battlefield and patriot grave, to every living heart and hearthstone, all over this broad land, will yet swell the chorus of the union, when again touched, as surely they will be, by the better angels of our nature.” |  |  |  |
| Mary Chesnut - Actress | “I do not pretend to go to sleep.  How can I?  If Anderson does not accept terms, at four, the orders are, he shall be fired upon.  I count four St. Michael chimes.  I begin to hope.  The heavy booming of a cannon, I sprang out of bed and on my knees prostrate.  I prayed, as I have never prayed before.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Civil War began at 4:30 a.m. on the twelfth of April, 1861.  General Pierre Gustave Toutant Beauregard ordered his Confederate gunners to open fire on Fort Sumter, at that hour, only a dark shape out in Charleston harbor.  Confederate Commander Beauregard was a gunner, so skilled as a artillery student at West Point, that his instructor kept him on as an assistant for another year.  That instructor was Major Robert Anderson, union commander inside Fort Sumter. |  |  |  |
| William Merrick Bristoll - Actor | “All the pent up hatred of the past months and years is voiced in the thunder of these cannon, and the people seem almost beside themselves in the exaltation of a freedom they deem already won.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The signal to fire the first shot was given by a civilian, Edmund Ruffin, a Virginia farmer and editor, who had preached secession for 20 years.  “Of course”, he said, “I was delighted to perform the service”. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | 34 hours later, a white flag over the Fort, ended the bombardment.  The only casualty had been a Confederate horse.  It was a bloodless opening to the bloodiest war in American History. |  |  | 00:49:34 |
| Ulysses S. Grant –  Actor | “The first gun that was fired at Fort Sumter sounded the death nail of slavery.  They who fired it, were the greatest practical abolitionists this nation has produced.” |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong – Actor | “April 13th, 1861. So Civil War is inaugurated at last. God defend the right.” |  |  |  |
| Editor, Montgomery Daily Advertiser - Actor | 14 April, Montgomery Daily Advertiser.  “The intelligence that Fort Sumter has surrendered to the Confederate Forces yesterday sent a thrill of joy to the heart of every true friend of the south.  The face of every southern man was brighter, his step lighter, and his bearing prouder than it had been before.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In Boston jubilant volunteers marched past Faneuil Hall eager to avenge Fort Sumter.  In Baltimore, anti Lincoln men rampaged through the streets.  In Richmond, a mob marched on the state house, tore down the stars and stripes and raised the stars and bars.  There was no longer any doubt that Virginia would secede.  And in New York, a hundred thousand people crowed Union Square, where the Sumter flag now flew.  Walt Whitman, sometimes poet and journalist for the Brooklyn Standard, was stunned by the news.  “All the past we leave behind with Sumter”, he said. |  |  |  |
| Mary Chesnut –  Actress | “Woe to those who began this war if they were not in bitter earnest.”  Mary Chesnut |  |  |  |
| Theodore. Upson –  Actor | “Father and I were husking out corn when William Corey came across the field,. He was excited and said, Jonathan, the rebels have fired upon Fort Sumter. Father got white and couldn’t say a word.”  Theodore F. Upson |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong – Actor | “April 15th. Events multiply.  The President is out with a proclamation calling for 75,000 volunteers.  It is said 200,000 more will be called for within a few days.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On the day Sumter fell, the regular army of the United States consisted of fewer than 17,000 men, most of whom were stationed in the far west.  Only two of its generals had ever commanded an army in the field, and both were long past their prime. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Winfield Scott, the hero of the Mexican War, old fuss and feathers, was too fat even to mount a horse. |  |  | 00:53:18 |
| Hercules Standard –  Actor | “We was treated as good as company could be at every station. We got kisses from the girls at a good many places, and we returned the same to them.”  Hercules Standard |  |  |  |
| Unknown Confederate Soldier –  Actor | “I’ve got the best suit of clothes I’ve ever had in my life.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In the north, they came by hundreds and by thousands.  From Boston Massachusetts, from Detroit and Ann Arbor Michigan, and Portsmouth, New Hampshire in the rain.  Whole towns signed up.  The tenth Michigan Volunteer Infantry was made up of Flint boys, their commander was the Mayor, their regimental Doctor, the man who had been taking care of them since they were young.  The sixth New York contained so many Bowery toughs it was said a man had to do time in prison just to get into the regiment.  The elite seventh, on the other hand, set out for Washington with sandwiches from Delmonicos, and a 1000 velvet covered camp stools, on which to sit and eat them.  On his way to war, Lt. George Armstrong Custer, just 22, and less than a month out of West Point, where he had graduated at the bottom of his class, stopped in New York to have himself fitted out with a splendid new uniform, then went to a photographer.  In Pawtuxet, Rhode Island, 19-year-old Elisha Hunt Rhodes, left his job as a harness makers clerk, and signed on as a Private in the 2nd Rhode Island Volunteers.  He would have joined earlier but his widowed mother begged him to stay home. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes - Actor | “We drilled all day and night.  Standing before a long mirror I put in many hours of weary work and thought myself quite a soldier.  I was elected First Sergeant, much to my surprise.  Just what a First Sergeant’s duties might be, I had no idea.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | After two weeks of drilling, the 2nd Rhode Island moved out. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes - Actor | “Today we have orders to pack up and be ready to leave for Washington.  My knapsack was so heavy that I could scarcely stagger under the load.  At the Wharf an immense crowd had gathered and we went on board our steamer with mingled feelings of joy and sorrow.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In Baton Rouge, William Tecumseh Sherman resigned as superintendent of the Louisiana Military Academy and headed north.  “You politicians”, he told his brother, Senator John Sherman of Ohio, “have got things in a hell of a fix, and you may get them out as best you can, I will have no more to do with it”.  But when Sumter fell, he put his uniform back on, and reluctantly went to war. |  |  | 00:56:28 |
| William Tecumseh Sherman - Actor | “You might as well attempt to put out the flames of a burning house with a squirt gun.  I think is to be a long war, very long, much longer than any politician thinks.” |  |  |  |
| Ulysses S. Grant - Actor | “There are but two parties now, traitors and patriots, and I want hereafter to be ranked with the latter.”  Ulysses S. Grant |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In Galena, Illinois, 39 year old Ulysses S. Grant was working in his father’s harness shop, having failed as a peace time soldier, and considered by some, a drunk.  Now he signed on as a mustering officer, handling the flood of volunteers, at $4.20 a day. |  |  |  |
| William Nugent - Actor | “New Orleans, 1861. I feel that I would like to shoot a Yankee, and yet I know that this would not be in harmony with the spirit of Christianity.”  William Nugent |  |  |  |
| Sam Watkins - Actor | “So impatient did I become for startin that I felt like a thousand pins were pricking me in every part of my body and I started out a week in advance of my brothers.” |  |  |  |
| Unknown Confederate Soldier - Actor | “I found Mobile brimming over with enthusiasm.  The young merchants had dropped their ledgers and were forming and drilling companies by night and day.” |  |  |  |
| Mary Chesnut – Actress | “Every day regiments march by.  Charleston is crowded with soldiers.  These new ones are running in fairly. They fear the war will be over before they get sight of the fun.  Every man from every little country precinct wants a place in the picture.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Confederate government, its capital now in Richmond, called for 100,000 volunteers.  So many southerners volunteered that a third of them had to be sent home.  They came from Catahoula and Baton Rouge Louisiana, Greensville, Mississippi, Moonsville, Alabama, and Chattanooga, Tennessee.  Tennessee joined the Confederacy, so did Arkansas and North Carolina.  In Memphis, Nathan Bedford Forrest, a blacksmith’s son, who had made himself a millionaire, selling land, cotton and slaves, put up posters, calling on anyone, who wanted to kill Yankees, to come and ride with him. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Clinch Rifles, from Augustine Georgia, started out in May 1861.  Only the drummer boy would survive.  The odds against a Southern victory were long.  There were nearly 21 million people in the north, just 9 million in the Confederacy, and 4 million of them were slaves, whom their masters did not dare arm.  The value of all the manufactured goods produced in all the Confederate states added up to less than one fourth of those produced in New York State alone.  But none of this mattered to the men who joined the Tallapoosa Thrashers, the Chickasaw Desperados, and Cherokee Lincoln Killers. |  |  | 00:59:43 |
| Sam  Watkins –  Actor | “The histories of the lost cause are all written out by big bugs, generals and renowned historians.  Well I have as much right as any man to write a history.”  Sam Watkins |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | One of the first to answer the southern call was 21 year old Sam Watkins of Columbia Tennessee.  He joined Company H of the first Tennessee at Nashville.  Like most rebel soldiers, he owned no slaves. |  |  |  |
| Sam  Watkins - Actor | “The bugle sounded to strike tents and place everything aboard the cars. We went bowling along at 30 miles per hour as fast as steam could carry us.  At every town and station, citizens and ladies were waiving their handkerchiefs and hooraying for Jeff Davis and the Southern Confederacy.  It’s worth soldiering to receive such a welcome as this.” |  |  |  |
| Winfield  Scott –  Actor | “If the President of the United States would tell me that a great battle was to be fought for the liberty or slavery of the country, and asked my judgment as to the ability of the commander, I would say with my dying breath, let it be Robert E. Lee.”  General Winfield Scott |  |  |  |
| Robert E. Lee –  Actor | I can anticipate no greater calamity for the country then the dissolution of the Union.  It would be an accumulation of all the evils we complain of, and I am willing to sacrifice everything but honor for its preservation.”  Robert E. Lee |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The most promising officer in the regular army was Robert E. Lee of Virginia.  On April 18th, four days after Sumter, Lee was summoned to Blair House, at Lincoln’s behest, and offered field command of the entire Union Army.  Lee said he would think about it.  Virginia had voted to secede the day before. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | That night he paced anxiously in the gardens around his Arlington mansion across the Potomac.  At midnight, Saturday the 20th, Lee wrote his letter of resignation from the United States Army.  On the 21st, the Governor of Virginia, asked him to take command of the state militia. |  |  | 01:02:47 |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “When he had to choose between the nation and Virginia there was never any doubt about what his choice would be.  He went with his state, and he said, I can’t draw my sword against my native state, or as he often said my country.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Lincoln had lost his best soldier. |  |  |  |
| Mary Chesnut –  Actress | “Not by one word or look can we can we detect any change of the demeanor of the negro servants.  They make no sign.  Are they stupid, or wiser than we are, silent and strong, biding their time?”  Mary Chesnut |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Both sides thought it would be a 90 day war, and both sides agreed it was to be a white man’s fight.  Blacks who tried to sign up, were turned away. |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong – Actor | “April 19th. There has been a serious disturbance in Baltimore.  Regiments from Massachusetts assailed by a mob that was repulsed by shot and steel.  It’s a notable coincidence that the first blood in this great struggle is drawn by Massachusetts men on the anniversary of Lexington.” |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes - Actor | “We are in Washington, and what a city.  Mud, pigs, negroes, palaces, shanties, everywhere.  As we passed the white house, I had my first view of Abraham Lincoln.  He looks like a good, honest man, and I trust that with God’s help he can bring our country safely out of its peril.”  Elisha Hunt Rhodes |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Rhode Island set up their bunks at the patent office.  New Yorkers slept on the carpeted floor of the House Chamber.  Massachusetts men camped in the Rotunda and cooked their bacon on furnaces in the basement.  Overhead the Capitol Dome remained incomplete.  Despite the war, Lincoln insisted that the work go on.  “I take it as a sign”, he said, “ that the Union will continue”. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes - Actor | “The first thing in the morning is drill.  Then drill, then drill again, then drill, drill, a little more drill, then drill, then lastly drill.  Between drills we drill and sometimes stop to eat a little and have a role call.” |  |  | 01:05:26 |
| Edward Hastings Ripley - Actor | “Outskirts of Baltimore:  My Dear William.  I can now march 20 and 25 miles a day, live on short rations of hardtack, raw, rancid bacon, green roasting ears and cold water, sleep out in the rain and heavy dew with nothing but an army coat over me, and enjoy myself capitally.”  Edward Hastings Ripley |  |  |  |
| Shelby Foote -  Historian | “Early in the war there was a young Confederate Veteran, a young country boy on guard duty, walking his post in the woods, and there was an owl unknown to him in a tree nearby, and the owl said whoooo, and the boy, trembling with fear, said it’s me sir, John Albert, a friend of yours” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In May, Union troops crossed the Potomac by torchlight and took the heights of Arlington.  Robert E. Lee’s house would be occupied by Union troops for the rest of the war.  In late June the new general in charge of the union army, Irvin McDowell outlined plans for attacking the Confederates in Virginia, but he did not yet want to fight.  “This is not an army”, he warned the president.  “You are green it is true”, Lincoln answered, “but they are green also. You are all green alike.”  To preserve the Constitution, Lincoln had, for three months, gone beyond it. Waging war without congressional consent, ceasing Northern telegraph offices, suspending habeas corpus.  To keep the border states from seceding, Lincoln sent troops to occupy Baltimore, and clapped the mayor and 19 secessionist legislators in jail, without trial.  Chief Justice Tawny ruled that the president had exceeded his power.  Lincoln simply ignored him.  “More rogues than honest men find shelter under habeas corpus”, he said, and even contemplated arresting the Chief Justice. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “A very mysterious man. He’s got so many sides to him.  The curious thing about Lincoln to me, is that he could remove himself from himself, as if he were looking at himself. It’s a very strange, very eerie thing, and highly intelligent.  It’s a simple thing to say, but Lincoln’s been so smothered with stories of his compassion that people forget what a highly intelligent man he was.  And almost everything he did, almost everything he did, was calculated for effect.” |  |  |  |
| Frederick Douglass –  Actor | “Teach the rebels and traitors that the price they are to pay for the attempt to abolish this government must be the abolition of slavery.”  Frederick Douglass |  |  | 01:09:47 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | From the start of the war slaves fled their plantations for the Union lines.  But Lincoln’s policy was clear.  Despite pressure from the abolitionists, he insisted he was making war on secession, not slavery, and ordered the army to return fugitives to their owners.  But now an unlikely figure helped to change men’s minds.  General Benjamin Butler was a Massachusetts politician, with crossed eyes and mixed motives, who has once backed Jefferson Davis for President of the United States.  Returning slaves only aided the enemy Butler argued, and he got permission to hold fugitive slaves as contraband of war, and employ them as laborers in the union army. |  |  |  |
| Benjamin Butler –  Actor | “Major Carey of Virginia asked if I did not feel myself bound by my Constitutional obligations to deliver up fugitives under the fugitive slave act.  To this I replied, that the fugitive slave act did not effect a foreign country, which Virginia claimed to be, and she must reckon it one of the infelicity’s of her position, that in so far at least she was taken at her word.”  General Benjamin Butler |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The trickle of runaways coming into northern lines now swelled to a flood.  One ex-slave who had recently bought his freedom told a union soldier, “If I had known you gunmen was a coming, I’d have saved my money.”  War was breaking out all across the country.  There were engagements at Big Bethel, Virginia, and Booneville, Missouri, skirmishes from Maryland to New Mexico Territory.  At Philippi, at western Virginia, a young Union General, George McClellan, won a small, highly publicized victory, over a tiny Confederate force.  But still, there had been no decisive battle. |  |  |  |
| Mary Chesnut - Actress | “July 9. Our battle summer. May it be our first and our last, so called. After all, we have not had any of the horrors of war.”  Mary Chesnut |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes - Actor | “July 16. It begins to look warlike and we shall probably have a chance to pay our southern brethren a visit upon the sacred soil of Virginia, very soon.  I hope we shall be successful, and give the rebels a good pounding.”  Elisha Hunt Rhodes |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On July 16th, the volunteer union army of 37,000 men marched into Virginia.  Their aim, to cut the railroad at Manassas, then move on at last to Richmond. |  |  |  |
| Editor, Washington Star –  Actor | “Washington Star.  The scene from the hills was grand.  Regiment after regiment was seen coming along the road and across the long bridge, their arms gleaming in the sun.  Cheer after cheer was heard as regiment greeted regiment, and with the marshal music and the sharp, clear orders of the officers, it made a combination of sounds very pleasant to the ear of a Union man.” |  |  | 01:13:30 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | To stop the Union invasion, 22,000 Confederate troops had moved north from Richmond, commanded by General Beauregard, who knew in advance the Federals were coming.  Rose Greenhow, a prominent socialite in Washington, and a Confederate spy, had alerted him.  Now Beauregard made his headquarters in Wilbur McLane’s farmhouse.  The Confederates formed a meandering eight mile line along one side of Bull Run Creek.  They were less than 25 miles from Washington.  And there they waited.  Hundreds of Washingtonians in holiday mood rode out to Manassas hoping to see a real battle.  Some brought field glasses, picnic baskets, bottles of champaign. |  |  |  |
| James Tinkham- Actor | “We saw carriages, which contained civilians, who had driven out from Washington to witness the operations.  Connecticut boys said, ‘there’s our Senator’, and some of our men recognized other members of Congress.  We thought it wasn’t a bad idea to have the great men from Washington come out to see us thrash the Rebs.”  Private James Tinkham |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On the morning of the 21st, McDowell sent his men across Bull Run.  They smashed into the left side of the Confederate line, driving the Rebels from one position after another.  The civilian onlookers waived hats, fluttered handkerchiefs.  It was not yet noon, and all was going just as they wanted. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes - Actor | “On reaching a clearing separated from our left flank by a rail fence we were saluted by a volley of musketry which was fired so high that all the bullets went over our head.  My first sensation was astonishment at the peculiar whir of the bullets, and that the regiment immediately laid down without waiting for orders.” |  |  |  |
| James Tinkham- Actor | “We fired a volley and saw the Rebels running.  The boys were saying constantly, in great glee, ‘we’ve whipped em, we’ll hang Jeff Davis to a sour apple tree, they’re running, the war’s over.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | An onlooker remembered that the advancing Union army looked like a bristling monster, lifting himself by a slow wavy motion, up the laborious ascent.    Union victory seemed so sure that on one part of the battlefield men stopped to gather souvenirs.  But holding a hill at the center of the southern line was a Virginia brigade led by General Thomas Jackson.  While other southern commands wavered, Jackson’s held firm.  On Confederate officer, trying to rally his own frightened men, shouted, “Look, there’s Jackson with his Virginians, standing like a stone wall”.  The name stuck. |  |  | 01:16:25 |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “He had a strange combination of religious fanaticism and a glory in battle.  He loved battle. His eyes would light up. They called him old blue light because the way his eyes would light up in battle.  He was totally fearless, he had no thought whatsoever of danger at any time the battle was on. And he could define what he wanted to do.  He said, ‘Once you get em running you can stay right on top of em, and that way a small force can defeat a large one every time’.  He knew perfectly well that a reputation for victory would roll and build.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | It was the turning point.  At 4 o’clock Beauregard ordered a counter attack.  Jackson urged his men to yell like furries.  The Rebel Yell first heard that day would echo from a thousand battlefields.  Confederate re-enforcements began to arrive.  The first came on horseback.  More arrived by train, something new in war.  The northern army fell apart.  The retreat soon became a rout, as union guns became entangled with the carriages of fleeing spectators. |  |  |  |
| Albert G.  Riddle –  Actor | “We tried to tell them that there was no danger, called upon them to stop, explored them to stand.  We called them cowards, put out our heavy revolvers and threatened to shoot, but all in vain.” |  |  |  |
| W. W. Blackford –  Actor | “Along the shady little valley through which our road lay, the surgeons have been plying their vocation all the morning upon the wounded. Tables about breast high had been erected, upon which screaming victims were having legs and arms cut off. The surgeons and their assistants, stripped to the waist and all this spattered with blood, stood around, some holding the poor fellows, while others armed with long bloody knives and saws, cut and sawed away with frightful rapidity. Throwing the mangled limbs on a pile nearby as soon as removed.”  Lt. Col. W. W. Blackford, First Cavalry, Virginia |  |  |  |
| Josiah  Favill  - Actor | “What a horrible sight it was hearing a man grasping his gun firmly in his hands, stone dead.  Several with distorted features, all horribly dirty.  Many were terribly wounded, some with legs shot off, others with arms gone.  Some so badly wounded they could not drag themselves away, slowly bleeding to death.  We stopped, many times, to give some a drink, and soon saw enough to satisfy us with the horrors of war.”  Lieutenant Josiah Favill |  |  | 01:19:25 |
| Elisha Hunt  Rhodes –  Actor | “I struggled on clinging to my gun and cartridge box.  Many times I sat down in the mud, determined to go no further, and willing to die and end my misery.  But soon a friend would pass and urge me to make another effort, and I would stagger a mile further.  At daylight, we could see the spires of Washington, and a welcome sight it was.  The loss of the regiment in this disastrous affair, was 93 killed, wounded or missing.” |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “There’s a Congressman, I believe from Alabama, I’ve forgotten where from, who said there would be no war, and he offered to wipe up all the blood that would be shed with a pocket handkerchief.  That was his prediction.  I’ve always said someone could get a PHD by calculating how many pocket handkerchiefs it would take to wipe up all the blood shed.  It would be a lot of handkerchiefs” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | From the Confederate White House in Richmond, Jefferson Davis rejoiced. |  |  |  |
| Jefferson Davis –  Actor | “My fellow citizens:  Your little army, derided for its want of arms, derided for all its lack of the essential material of war, has met the grand army of the enemy, routed it at every point, and it now flies in glorious retreat before our victorious columns.  We have taught them a lesson, in their invasion of the sacred soil of Virginia.” |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong - Actor | “Today will be known as Black Monday. We are utterly and disgracefully routed, beaten, whipped, by secessionists.”  George Templeton Strong |  |  |  |
| William Howard Russell - Actor | “London Times:  The inmates of the White House are in a state of upmost trepidation. Mr. Lincoln in despair. Why Beauregard does not attack Washington, I know not, nor can I well guess.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | It was remembered as a great skedaddle.  For days discourage troops straggled back into Washington. |  |  | 01:22:15 |
| William Howard Russell - Actor | “I saw a steady stream of men, covered with mud, soaked through with rain, who were pouring irregularly up Pennsylvania Avenue toward the capital.  A dense stream of vapor rose from the multitude.  I asked a pale young man, who looked exhausted to death, if the whole army had been defeated.  ‘That’s more than I know’, he said, ‘I know, I’m going home. I’ve had enough of fighting to last my lifetime’”. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The North was appalled at the 5000 casualties.  Both sides now knew it would be no 90 days war.  Two days later, canny real estate speculators bought the battlefield to make a second kind of killing, as a tourist attraction. |  |  |  |
| Frederick Douglass - Actor | “What upon earth is the matter with the American people.  Do they really cover the world’s ridicule, as well as their own social and political ruin.  The national edifice is on fire. Every man who can carry a bucket of water or remove a brick is wanted.  Yet government leaders persistently refuse to receive as soldiers the slaves.  The very class of men which has a deeper interest in the defeat and humiliation of the rebels then all others.  Such is the pride, the stupid prejudice and folly, that rules the hour.”  Frederick Douglass |  |  |  |
| William Howard Russell - Actor | “Little did I conceive of the greatness of the defeat.  The magnitude of the disaster which had entailed upon the United States.  So short lived has been the American Union, that men who saw it rise, may live to see it fall.”  William Russell, London Times |  |  |  |
| George McClellan –  Actor | “Washington, August.  I found no preparations whatever for defense.  My regiment was properly encamped, not a single avenue or approach, guarded.  All was chaos, and the streets, hotels and barrooms were filled with drunken officers and men absent from their regiments without leave.  Perfect pandemonium”  George McClellan |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Five days after the disaster at Bull Run, a new General took over what was now called the Army of the Potomac .  George Britain McClellan, only 34, seemed just with the North needed.  He brought with him to the demoralized capital, what one aide called, ‘An indescribable air of success’.  He replaced inept officers with regulars.  He laid out tidy camps around Washington to accommodate the 10,000 new volunteers arriving each week.  Drilled them 8 hours a day, and staged grand reviews to boost morale. |  |  | 01:25:16 |
| Reggie  Detra  Bien –  Actor | “All the attention was upon the young general with the calm eye, with the satisfied air who moved around followed by an immense staff, to the clanking of sabers and the acclamation of the spectators.”  Reggie Detra Bien |  |  |  |
| George McClellan –  Actor | “I find myself in a new and strange position here.  President, the cabinet and General Scott all deferring to me.  By some strange piece of magic, I seem to have become the power of the land.  I almost think that were I to win some small success now, that I could become dictator, or anything else that might please me.  But nothing of that kind would please me.  Therefore I won’t be a dictator.  Admirable self-denial.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The newspapers called him young Napoleon, and he could not help seeing the resemblance himself.  But 100,000 untrained volunteers had become an army.  McClellan’s army.  His men, who loved him for having made them proud of themselves, called him little Mac. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “His specialty was preparing troops to fight. And he did that superbly.  McClellan trained that army.  Whatever the Army of the Potomac did in the after years, was largely due to the training McClellan gave them in that first year.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | With Lincoln, McClellan and his staff devised a three-pronged attack on the Confederacy.  One army would drive into Virginia and take Richmond.  Another would secure Kentucky and Tennessee, then push into the heartland of the Confederacy and occupy Mississippi, Alabama and Georgia.  Meanwhile the Navy would clear the Mississippi, surround the Confederacy by sea, and choke off supplies. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Meanwhile the Navy would clear the Mississippi, surround the Confederacy by sea, and choke off supplies.  The war would be fought along a 1000 mile front.  That fall, Lincoln elevated McClellan to General in chief, replacing the aging Winfield Scott.  “I can do it all”, McClellan said.  But he did nothing.  As summer turned to autumn, it became increasingly clear, that having made a magnificent army, George McClellan had no immediate plans to lead it anywhere. |  |  | 01:27:37 |
| Ulysses S. Grant –  Actor | “As we approached the bough of the hill, my heart kept getting higher and higher, til it felt to me that it was in my throat.  I would have given anything then to have been back in Illinois.  But I kept right on.  When the valley below was in full view, I halted.  The enemy’s troops were gone.  My heart resumed its place. And it occurred to me at once, that he had been as much afraid of me, as I of him.  This was a view of the question I had never taken before, but it was one that I never forgot afterwards.”  General Ulysses S. Grant |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In September, Ulysses S. Grant took Paducah Kentucky, a strategic city at the mouth of the Tennessee.  But two months later his undisciplined recruits were almost destroyed looting a captured rebel camp, instead of preparing for a counterattack.  Grant was returned to desk duty.  In November, William Tecumseh Sherman was relieved as Union commander in Kentucky, when he insisted that at least 200,000 men would be needed to suppress the rebellion in the West.  No one believed him.  He grew melancholic, prone to fits of anxiety, and rage.  “Sherman”, McClellan said, “is gone in the head”.  December found him at home in the care of his wife, contemplating suicide. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “No, no one thought it would last long.  No one on either side thought it would last long.  Those few individuals that said that it would, Tecumseh Sherman for instance, were actually judged to be insane, for making predictions about casualties, which were actually low.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In November, a Union warship stopped a British steamer at gunpoint in international waters and arrested two Confederate diplomats found on board.  Britain’s Prime Minister, Lord Palmerston, was outraged, demanded their immediate release, and dispatched 11,000 troops to Canada.  “One war at a time”, Lincoln said, and quietly let the two confederates go.  By December, optimists on both sides were disappointed.  The Confederacy showed no signs of imminent collapse  The North would not abandon its efforts to reunite the nation by force.  By the end of the year, there were 700,000 men in the Union Army.  No one knew how many Confederates there where. |  |  | 01:30:14 |
| George Templeton Strong –  Actor | “December 31st.  Poor old 1861, just going.  It has been a gloomy year, of trouble and disaster.  I should be glad of its departure, were it not that 1862, is likely to be no better.”  George Templeton Strong |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | A week before the Battle of Bull Run, Sullivan Ballou, a Major in the Second Rhode Island volunteers, wrote home to his wife in Smithfield. |  |  |  |
| Sullivan Ballou  - Actor | “July the 14th, 1861, Washington, DC.  Dear Sarah.  The indications are very strong that we shall move in a few days - perhaps tomorrow. And lest I should not be able to write you again, I feel impelled to write a few lines that may fall under your eye when I am no more.  I have no misgivings about, or lack of confidence in, the cause in which I am engaged, and my courage does not halt or falter. I know how American Civilization now leans upon the triumph of the Government, and how great a debt we owe to those who went before us through the blood and suffering of the Revolution. And I am willing - perfectly willing - to lay down all my joys in this life, to help maintain this Government, and to pay that debt.  Sarah, my love for you is deathless, it seems to bind me to you with mighty cables that nothing but Omnipotence could break; and yet my love of Country comes over me like a strong wind, and bears me irresistibly, with all those chains to the battlefield.  The memory of the blissful moments I have enjoyed with you come crowding over me, and I feel most deeply grateful to God, and you, that I have enjoyed them for so long. And how hard it is for me to give them up and burn to ashes the hopes of future years, when God willing, we might still have lived and loved together, and seen our boys grown up to honorable manhood around us. If I do not return, my dear Sarah, never forget how much I loved you, nor that when my last breath escapes me on the battlefield, it will whisper your name.”  “Forgive my many faults, and the many pains I have caused you. How thoughtless, how foolish, I have sometimes been.  But, O Sarah, if the dead can come back to this earth, and flit unseen around those they love, I shall always be with you, in the brightest day and in the darkest night. Always. Always. And when the soft breeze fans your cheek, it shall be my breath, or the cool air at your throbbing temple, it shall be my spirit passing by.  Sarah, do not mourn me dead. Think I am gone, and wait for me. For we shall meet again.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Sullivan Ballou was killed a week later at the first battle of Bull Run. |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| **Chapter / Episode 2 – Very Bloody Affair: 1862** | | | | |
| Narrator  David McCullough | At the Willard Hotel in Washington, DC, the poet, Julia Ward Howe awoke from a spectacular dream.  That day, she had heard a New England regiment singing on parade, and had fallen asleep with the song John Brown’s body ringing in her head.  Now in the dark, she got up and scribbled out the words with a pencil stub.  She sold her poem to the Atlantic Monthly for four dollars.  It became the anthem of the Union. |  |  | 01:39:26 |
| Julia Ward Howe –  Actor | “Mine eyes have seen the glory of the coming of the Lord.  He is trampling out the vintage, where the grapes of wrath are stored.  He has loosed the fateful lighting of His terrible swift sword.  His truth is marching on.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | By 1862, Russia had emancipated the surfs.  In France, Victor Hugo published Les Miserables  Jean Bernard Fuco, measured the speed of light.  In America, the United States passed the first national income tax, to pay for war.  The Gatling gun was invented, and war itself was changing.  The shocking casualties of Bull Run and Wilson’s creek, were dwarfed by battle after battle.  And now, there were new questions.  Would the north’s strength be offset by incompetence and low moral?  Would England side with cotton and the south?  Who would control the Mississippi?  For a year, the nation, now two nations, had torn itself apart.  From a bloodless dual over a man-made island in Charleston harbor, war had spread along a 1000 mile line, from Manassas, Virginia to Shanghi, Missouri and beyond.  As 1862 began, over a million men were massing for war.  In a fierce struggle for Tennessee, the people of Clarksville on the Cumberland, found themselves prisoners in their own homes.  Far north of any fighting, the people of Deer Isle, Maine, suffered too, with sad news from places most of them had never heard of.  By the end of the war, the little town of Winchester Virginia, had changed hands 72 times.  Sam Watkins, a Confederate private, would see his first big battle, in April on the banks of the Tennessee.  Elisha Hunt Rhodes, a clerk from Providence, Rhode Island, would celebrate his 20th birthday in a Union Camp.    Union General George McClellan, the idol of his troops, would fashion a mighty army and lead it south toward Richmond, where Robert E. Lee was waiting.  “The struggle of today”, Lincoln told Congress, “is not altogether for today. It is for a vast future also.”  Now, in this, its second year, the war was becoming a struggle over the future of freedom. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “It really is one of those ah, one of those watershed things.  There was a huge chasm between the beginning and the end of the war.  The nation had come face to face with a dreadful tragedy, and we reacted the way a family would do with a dreadful tragedy. It was almost inconceivable that anything that horrendous could happen.  You must remember the casualties in Civil War Battles were so far beyond anything we can imagine now.  If we had ten percent casualties in a battle today, it would be looked on as a blood bath.  They had 30 percent in several battles, and one after another you see.” |  |  | 01:42:55 |
| Elisha Hunt  Rhodes –  Actor | “This afternoon seeing the General alone in the office, I stepped up to him and said, ‘General, I want to go home’.  ‘Want to go home and for what’, he replied.  As I could not think of an excuse, I blurted out, ‘I want to see my mother’.  ‘Is she sick’, he asked.  ‘No’, I replied, ‘I hope not’.  He then asked me how long since I left home, and if I was ever away from home so long a time before.  I told him I had been in the service seven months and never been away alone from home alone before.  ‘Well’, said the general, ‘you have been a good boy, and you shall have a furlough for ten days.’”  Elisha Hunt Rhodes |  |  |  |
| Sam  Watkins –  Actor | “I always shot at privates.  It was they that did the shooting and killing,  And if I could kill or wound a private, why my chances were so much the better.  I always looked on officers as harmless personages.”  Sam Watkins |  |  | 01:45:30 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The commander of Sam Watkins Company H was Captain William R. Johnston.  His immediate superior was Colonel George Maney of the First Tennessee.  From there, the Confederate chain of command ascended through Colonel William H. Stephens, of the Second Brigade;  To General Benjamin Chetham, Commander of the Second Division;  Of General Lyon Idus Polk’s First Army Corps;  Then to General Albert Sydney Johnston, Commander of the Army of the Mississippi;  Above that to War Secretary, George W. Randolph;  Finally to Jefferson Davis, President of the Confederate States of America.  For one Union soldier, the chain of command ascended from President Lincoln;  Secretary of War, Simon Cameron;  General McClellan, Commander of the Army of the Potomac;  To General Erasmus Keyes, Commander of the Union Fourth Corps;  General Darius N. Cooch, of Cooch’s Brigade;  To Colonel Frank Wheaton, Commander of the Second Rhode Island Volunteers;  Then finally, to Private Elisha Hunt Rhodes. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt  Rhodes –  Actor | “January 31, 1862, mud, mud, mud,  I’m thinking of starting a steamboat line to run on Pennsylvania Avenue, between our office and the capital.  Will the mud never dry, so the army can move?” |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong –  Actor | “Of all the detestable places, Washington is the first.  Crowds, heat, bad quarters, bad fare, bad smells, mosquitoes and the plague of flies transcending everything within my experience.  Beelzebub surely reins here, and Willard’s Hotel is his temple.”  George Templeton Strong |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “Throughout Lincoln’s presidency, and this is true of most presidents, he was fairly run crazy by office seekers, especially at the start, when his campaign managers had promised jobs to a great many people, who came to collect them.  And One man saw him one day, and he looked particularly worried, and said ‘What’s the matter Mr. President’, and Lincoln said, There’s too many pigs for the tits” |  |  | 01:47:48 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Abraham Lincoln’s problems were not confined to fighting rebels alone.  The president’s unwieldy cabinet included former Conservative Whigs, Free Soil Whigs, and Union Democrats. Four had been his rivals for the Republican presidential nomination. Nearly all, were privately sure that they could do a better job than their chief.  Secretary of State William H. Seward, hoped to replace Lincoln. Secretary of the Treasury Salmon P. Chase, wanted to replace Seward. Mary Todd told her husband to get rid of both of them.  Instead Lincoln fired Secretary of War Simon P. Cameron, the Pennsylvania boss so corrupt, said Lincoln, “the only thing he wouldn’t steal was a red hot stove.”  The new secretary of War was Edwin M. Stanton, an able, ruthless, war Democrat from Ohio, who worried about what he believed to be Lincoln’s painful imbecility.  On one thing the cabinet was agreed, General George McClellan was not moving fast enough against the confederates. “The army”, Secretary of War Stanton said, “has got to fight or run away. The champaign and oysters on the Potomac, must be stopped.” |  |  |  |
| George McClellan  Actor- | “Dear Ellen.  I can’t tell you how disgusted I am becoming with these wretched politicians. They are a most despicable set of men.  Seward is a meddling, officious, incompetent little puppy. The President is nothing more than well-meaning baboon.”  George McClellan |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The President pored over military books, asked officers for advice, and in exasperation, suggested that “if General McClellan does not want to use the army, I would like to borrow it for a time.”  Finally, he ordered McClellan to move on Manassas Junction, and then to proceed overland to take Richmond.  But McClellan would not move, and took to his bed with a fever.  McClellan did not want to fight the vast Confederate Army, he had convinced himself now occupied northern Virginia. Instead, he proposed to float his army to Fortress Monroe, at the tip of a finger of land between James and York Rivers, then race up the peninsula to seize the Confederate capital.  Impatient for any action, Lincoln agreed. McClellan would move in mid-March. It had been eight months since the northern army had crawled back into Washington after Bull Run. |  |  |  |
| Joseph  Medill  Actor - | “February 9, 1862.  Dear Mr. President.  General McClellan has almost ruined your administration and the country.  He is a do nothing. He is thinking of the presidency in 64. He is placating the rebels. That’s what ails him. Depend upon it.  Joseph Medill |  |  | 01:51:05 |
| Abraham Lincoln  Actor - | “What shall I do? The people are inpatient.  Chase has no money and tells me he can raise no more.  The General of the Army, McClellan, has typhoid fever.  The bottom is out of the tub. What shall I do?” |  |  |  |
| George McClellan  Actor- | “Washington.  Dear Ellen.  I went to the White House shortly after the tea, where I found the original gorilla, about as intelligent as ever.  What a specimen to be at the ahead of our affairs now.”  George McClellan |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In the midst of all his troubles, the President delighted in his sons.  The oldest, Robert, was away at Harvard, but Willie, eleven, and eight-year-old Thomas, known as Tad, had the run of the White House.  Willie was studious, like to compose verse, and memorize railroad timetables.  He’d raised a boy’s battalion from among his schoolmates, and “invaded” cabinet meetings with his “troops”.  In February, he developed what the doctor called Bilious Fever. His parents sat up night after night to nurse him.  On February 20th, Willie died.  For three months, Mary Lincoln veered between loud weeping and silent depression, and sought to communicate with her dead child, through spiritualists. |  |  |  |
| Mary Todd Lincoln  Actor - | “If I had not felt the spur of necessity urging me to cheer Mr. Lincoln, whose grief was as great as my own, I could never have smiled again.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The war left Lincoln little time to mourn. He was soon back working 18 hours a day. |  |  |  |
| Gideon  Wells  Actor - | “As she came plowing through the water, she looked like a huge, half submerged crocodile.  At her prow I could see the iron ram projecting straightforward.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Confederacy had begun the war with no navy whatsoever, but by the fall of 1861 Confederate engineers were bolting iron plates to the hull of the steam frigate Merrimac.  Building a warship more powerful than anything the Union had.  News of the monster quickly reached the north. Secretary of War Stanton feared she would steam up the Potomac, and shell the White House.  There was probably only one man in America who could stop the Merrimac, and he was mad at the Navy.  The Swedish born inventor, John Ericson, was proud, vein and cranky, and felt he had been cheated out of payment for services to the government years before.  But when Secretary of the Navy Gideon Wells begged him to do something to stop the Merrimac, Ericsson came up with an extraordinary design.  His ship would have only two guns to the Miramax’s 10, but they would be mounted on a revolving turret.  Though his vessel would be made entirely of iron, Ericson assured everybody that “the sea shall ride over her, and she live in it like a duck.”  Professional Navy men dismissed the plan, but Lincoln overruled them. In just a hundred days later, on January 30, 1862, Ericson’s ship slid into Manhattan’s East River.  He called her the Monitor, and there had never been anything like her. The single vessel containing 47 patentable inventions. |  |  | 01:53:38 |
| Union  Sailor  Actor - | “We ran first to the New York side and then to Brooklyn, and so back and forth across the river, like a drunken man on a sidewalk.  We found that she would not answer her rudder at all.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Once at sea water spilled in, ventilators failed, the ship filled with gas, her crew began to faint, but the Monitor kept limping south.  Four hundred miles away, off the coast of Virginia, the Merrimac was waiting.  Saturday, March 8th, was wash day for the Union Fleet in Hampton Rhodes, Virginia.  Laundry was drying on the rigging of the Union Warships, when the Confederate Merrimac headed for the USS Cumberland.  The Cumberland opened fire, but the shots bounced hopelessly off the Merrimac’s sides. The Confederate ship rammed the Cumberland, then stood in so close their muzzles almost touched.  The Cumberland sank in shallow water.  The Merrimac went on to set the USS Congress afire, drove the USS Minnesota aground, then drew back for the night.  For one day the Confederate Navy ruled the seas.  At one o’clock that morning the crew of the battered Minnesota saw a strange looking ship draw up alongside them in the darkness. |  |  |  |
| Union  Sailor  Actor - | “Close alongside the Minnesota there was a craft such as the eyes of a seaman never looked upon before.  An immense shingle floating on the water, with a gigantic cheese box rising from its center.  No sails, no wheels, no smoke stack, no guns.  What could it be?” |  |  | 01:56:50 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The monitor had arrived.  The next morning, the epic battle of ironclads began.  Hull to hull, the two ships hammered away at each other, so close they collided five times, as the men inside, half blind with smoke, loaded and fired.  After four and half hours, the Merrimac drew off.  It was her only fight.  Two months later, rather than surrender their ship, the Confederates blew her up, when they were forced out of Norfolk.  Both sides set to work building more ironclads, while Europe watched in worried fascination.  From the moment the two ships opened fire that Sunday morning, every other Navy on earth was obsolete. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt  Rhodes  Actor - | “General Grant habitually wears an expression as if he had determined to drive his head through a brick wall and was about to do it.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The year 1862 would introduce two great forces into the war: unspeakable slaughter and Ulysses S. Grant.  While McClellan hesitated in Washington, Grant, back in the field after months of desk duty, won two crucial victories out west.  Launching simultaneous attacks by land and water, he took first, Fort Henry on the Tennessee River, then Fort Donelson on the Cumberland, where he issued an ultimatum to the Confederate Commander: “No terms except unconditional and immediate surrender.”  The Tennessee and Cumberland Rivers were now in Union hands. The Confederates had been driven from Kentucky. Dozens of southern towns were now occupied by Union troops.  In less than a year, Grant had gone from clerk to Union hero.  News stories described him coolly smoking under fire, and admirers shipped him barrels of cigars.  A delighted northern public, now thought they knew what the initials in his name stood for. They called him “unconditional surrender” Grant.  But before Grant’s men marched into Fort Donelson, Confederate General Nathan Bedford Forrest slipped out of it, with 1000 men.  “I did not come here for the purpose of surrendering my command”, he said, and led his troops 75 miles, through the snow, to safety.  Grant, and the Union army, would meet Bedford Forrest again. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | After the Confederate defeat at Fort Donelson, The Female Academy, and Stewart College, in nearby Clarksville Tennessee, were converted to hospitals. |  |  | 02:00:23 |
| Nannie Haskins  Actor - | “Sunday the news came. Such panic stricken people were never before seen.  The wounded were being brought up. The citizens were running.  There were already two hospitals here, which were filled with the sick, and they, poor fellas, were crawling out from every piece, walking, going on horseback, in wagons”  Nannie Haskins. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Union Army was right behind the wounded.  They met no resistance.  A white flag flew above tiny Fort Defiance, west of town. Mayor Smith came out to inform the Union Commander, that the Confederate Army had retreated to Nashville.  Farmer John Barker wrote in his diary, that there were nothing but Lincolnites throughout the county.  An uneasy federal occupation of Clarksville began. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “Early in the war, some, a Union squad closed in on a single, ragged Confederate, and he obviously didn’t own any slaves, and he couldn’t have much interest in the constitution, or anything else, and said ‘what are you fighting for any how’, they asked him, and he said,  ‘I’m fighting because you’re down here’.  Which was a pretty satisfactory answer.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On April 4th, George McClellan at last began to move for Richmond.  121,500 men, 14,592 horses and mules, 1150 wagons, 44 batteries of artillery, ambulances, pontoon bridges, tons of provisions, tents, telegraph wire.  It took 400 boats, three weeks to land it all, at Fortress Monroe, on the Virginia Coast. |  |  |  |
| Reverend  Alexander M.  Stewart  Actor- | “The whole region seems literally filled with soldiery.  One of the finest armies ever marshaled on the globe, now wakes up, these long stagnant fields and woods.  General McClellan is here, and commands in person”.  Rev. A.M. Stewart |  |  |  |
| George McClellan  Actor- | “I am to watch over you, as a parent over his children, and you know that your General loves you from the depths of his heart.  It shall be my care, to gain success, with the least possible loss” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | But at Yorktown, less than 20 miles away, the Confederates waited, vastly outnumbered, but determined to defend their homes and hurl back the invaders. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | For the North, it was slow going.  Roads said to be bone dry were bogs. Union officers, forced to rely on store-bought maps, lost their way.  Finally, on April 5th, the advance guard reached Yorktown, where the Confederates had taken over the building used by Lord Cornwallis’s headquarters, during the Revolutionary war.  There were just 11,000 Southern troops, dug in. Not even a tenth of McClellan’s force.  But the Confederate Commander was John Bankhead McGruder. A showy Virginian, who loved amateur theatricals. He now outdid even himself.  To fool McClellan, into believing that his small force was enormous, McGruder kept up a sporadic, widely scattered, artillery barrage, and paraded one battalion, in and out of a clearing, in an endless circle, til it seemed to Union observers, a mighty host. |  |  | 02:03:28 |
| Edmund Patterson  Actor - | “Corporal Edmund Patterson, 9th Alabama  This morning we were called out by the long role, and we have been traveling most of the day, seeming with no other view, but to show ourselves to the enemy, at as many different points of the line as possible.  I’m pretty tired.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | “It seems clear that I shall have the whole force of the enemy on my hands,” McClellan telegraphed Lincoln, “probably not less than 100,000 men, and possibly more.”  McClellan called for reinforcements  General Joseph E. Johnston, the overall Confederate Commander could not believe his luck.  “Nobody, but McClellan”, he said, “could have hesitated to attack”. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln  Actor - | “Once more, let me tell you, it is indispensable to you, that you strike a blow.  I have never written to you, or spoken to you, in greater kindness than now, nor with fuller purpose to sustain you, but you must act”. |  |  |  |
| George McClellan  Actor- | “The president very coolly telegraphed me, that he thought I had better break the enemy’s lines at once.  I was much tempted to reply that he better come and do it himself.”  George McClellan |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes  Actor - | “I don’t see the sense of piling up earth to keep us apart.  If we don’t get at each other sometime, when will the war end?  My plan would be to quit ditching and go to fighting.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | But McClellan chose to do dig in.  As he settled in for a siege of Yorktown, Union General Phil Carney took to calling his commander, the Virginia creeper. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “During the peninsular campaign, McClellan was working his way up the York/James Peninsula, and he came to a stream, and he and his staff were sitting there, wondering how deep it was, and if they could march across it.  And Custer, who was a junior officer, on his staff, just graduated from West Point, a Captain, I think, rode out into midstream, sat his horse and turned around in the saddle, and said, ‘McClellan, this is how deep it is General’ “. |  |  | 02:06:30 |
| Unidentified  Signing Man  Actor- | “I have seen Him in the watch-fires of a hundred circling camps.  They have builded Him an altar in the evening dews and damps.  I can read His righteous sentence by the dim and flaring lamps.  His day is marching on.” |  |  |  |
| Abner  Small  Actor - | “A man’s conceit dwindles when he crawls into an untezeled shirt, trousers too short, baggy behind, coat too long at both ends and a cap as shapeless as a feedbag.  A photograph of any one of them, covered with yellow dust, or mosaics of mud, would ornament any mantle, north or south, as a true picture of our boy.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | North and South, the average soldier was five feet, eight inches tall, and weighed 143 pounds.  His chance of dying in combat was one in sixty-five  Of being wounded one in ten.  One in thirteen would die of disease.  The average age of a soldier was 25.  The minimum age for enlistment was 18, but recruiting officers were not particular.  Drummer boys as young as 9 signed on.  There were more than 100,000 soldiers in the Union Army who were not yet 15 years old. William Black, was not yet 12 when he enlisted.  Shot in the left arm during battle, he was thought to be the youngest combat soldier wounded in the war. |  |  |  |
| Reverend  Alexander M.  Stewart  Actor- | “Almost every known trade that can fashion a calling has its representatives in our regiment.  Tailors, carpenters, masons, plasterers, molders, and glass blowers, peddlers and rollers, machinists, architects, printers, book binders, and publishers, gentlemen of leisure, politicians, merchants, legislators, judges, lawyers, doctors, preachers.  Some malicious fellow might ask the privilege of completing the catalogue by naming jailbirds, idlers, loafers, drunkards, and gamblers, but we’d beg his pardon, and refuse the license.”  “All the appliances of home life possible are being introduced into our encampment.  A weekly newspaper, a photographic establishment, a temperance league and a Christian Association. |  |  |  |
| Reverend  Alexander M.  Stewart  Actor- | We have a post office, letter box, postmaster and mail carrier.  Our boys write vastly more letters than they receive.  You can hardly imagine the eagerness with which the mailman is looked for.  The delight upon the reception of a letter.  The sadness, sometimes even to tears, with which those who are disappointed, turn away.”  Reverend A.M. Stewart |  |  | 02:09:45 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | For the enlisted man army life ment periods of tedium, punctuated by moments of extreme terror.  It also ment long absences from family and home. |  |  |  |
| Benjamin  Stubbs  Actor - | July 1862, Tupelo, Mississippi  Dear Sisters:  I would be the gladest person in the world to see you, and talk with you awhile. For I see nobody here but men, and they appear to be very sorry company.  I think I can enjoy myself at home, better than anywhere else in the world.”  Benjamin Stubbs |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | For those officers who took their families with them to camp, life was somewhat better. |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong  Actor - | “There has been a great battle indeed in the Southwest.  A conflict of two days, closely fought, and with varying fortune, and by great armies.  It seems entitled to a place among the first class battles of history.”  George Templeton Strong |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “It was fought in early April.  The trees were leafed out.  And the roads were meandering cow paths.  Nobody knew north from south, east from west.  They’d never been in combat before, most of them, especially on the southern side.  So it was just a disorganized, murderous, fist fight, of a hundred thousand men, slamming away at each other.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In early April, as McClellan continued to sit in front of Yorktown, 42,000 Union troops, under General Ulysses S. Grant, were encamped on the west side of the Tennessee River near Pittsburg Landing.  Grant’s invasion of Tennessee had practically cut the state in two, and now he was waiting for Don Carlos Buell’s, Army of the Ohio, to join him.  Their combined forces with then to plunge into the heart of Mississippi.  But Buell was late, and in Corinth, Mississippi, 22 miles away, the commander of the western department of the Confederate Army, Albert Sidney Johnston, saw no reason to wait.  Their armies were still evenly matched, and he would attack and end Grant’s invasion.  “Tonight we will water our horses in the Tennessee”, Johnston told his staff  officers in the morning of April 6th.  The Confederates quietly moved toward the Union lines. |  |  | 02:11:55 |
| Leander Stillwell  Actor - | “It was a most beautiful morning.  It really seemed like Sunday in the country at home.  The boys were all scattered around camp, polishing and brightening their muskets, brushing up, cleaning their shoes, jackets and trousers for inspection.”  Private Leander Stillwell |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | At the head of one Union Division, was William Tecumseh Sherman, who had shaken off the melancholy that had sent him home the previous year.  His Ohioans were encamped on a hill not far from a little log built Methodist Church called Shiloh, when the sixth Mississippi attacked. |  |  |  |
| Leander Stillwell  Actor - | “I saw men in gray and brown clothes, running through the camp.  And I saw something else, something I’d never seen before, a gaudy sort of thing with red bars, a rebel flag.” |  |  |  |
| Sam  Watkins  Actor - | “We were crowding them.  One more charge, and the lines would waiver and break.  They retreated in wild confusion.  We were jubilant, and the officers could not curb the men, to keep them in line.”  Sam Watkins |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The battle extended along a three mile front. The worst fighting was in the center, “where the rebels came on and on, like maddened demons”, a Union soldier said. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “The Generals didn’t know their jobs. The soldiers didn’t know their jobs.  It was just pure determination to stand and fight, and not retreat. And the bloodiness of it was just astounding to everyone.  It also corrected a southern misconception, which had said, that one good southern soldier, was worth 10 Yankee hirlings.  They found out that, that wasn’t true by a long shot.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In the peach orchard, the Federals lay flat beneath the blossoming trees, firing as the rebels came.  Soft pink pedals, raining down, on the living, and the dead.  By late morning thousands of untried federal troops had seen enough.  Most did not stop running until they reached the river, where almost 5000 men coward beneath the bluff.  “We are sweeping the field”, General Johnston told his second in command, Beaurgard, “and I think we shall press them to the river.”  Grant’s back was to the Tennessee, there was no sign of Buell, and nowhere else to go.  But a thin federal line held in the center, Illinois and Iowa farm boys mostly, prone along a sunken road.  Their commander, Benjamin Prentiss, understood the deadly seriousness of Grant’s order to maintain that position at all costs.  The Confederates launched a dozen massive assaults, against what became known as the Hornet’s nest.  Albert Sidney Johnston, himself, led the last charge. |  |  | 02:14:43 |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “He came out of it with bits of his clothing nicked all up.  One boot sole was shot in half and he flapped it up on horseback and said ‘they didn’t trip me up that time.’  And very soon after that they saw him reel in the saddle, and realized he was hurt, and someone said, ‘General are you wounded?’ and he said ‘yes, and I fear seriously’.  And he was shot behind the knee, in the ephemeral artery I suppose, and he bleed to death.  They saw blood coming out of his boot.  He could have been easily saved with a tourniquet, but he had sent his, his surgeon off to take care of some federal prisoners.” |  |  |  |
| Same Watkins  Actor - | “Advancing a little further we saw General Albert Sidney Johnston surrounded by his staff.  We saw some little commotion among those who surrounded him, but we did not know at the time that he was dead.  The fact was kept from the troops.”  Sam Watkins |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The command of the Western army now passed the General Beauregard. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “Albert Sidney Johnston was looked on by many people, at the time of Shiloh, and especially before Shiloh while he was holding that line up in Kentucky, as the South’s number one field soldier.  Jefferson Davis viewed him as that, and when he lost Albert Sidney Johnston, he said ‘that I realized that our strongest pillar has been broken’.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Meanwhile the center of the union line bent back on itself, but would not break.  Confederates trained 62 cannon at point plank range and opened fire.  The Hornets nest exploded, in a hail of splintered trees, and shattered men.  At 5:30, Prentiss and 2200 survivors of his division, surrendered.  They had held up the southern advance for nearly six hours, and it was growing dark.  Beauregard wired Jefferson Davis that he had won a complete victory.  “I had General Grant just where I wanted him”, he said, “ and could finish him up in the morning.”  Everywhere wounded men lay in agony.  Neither army had yet devised a system for gathering or caring for them on the field.  Scores of wounded collapsed, and died drinking from a mud hole near the peach orchard, staining the water red.  It began to rain, and flashes of lightening showed hogs feeding on the ungathered dead. |  |  | 02:17:13 |
| Leander Stillwell  Actor - | “Some cried for water, others for someone to come and help them.  I can hear those poor fellows crying for water.  God heard them, for the heavens opened and the rains came.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Grant spent that night beneath a tree, rather than listen to the screams of the wounded men in his headquarters.  It was there that Sherman found him.  “Well Grant’, he said, ‘we’ve had the devil’s own day, haven’t we.”  “Yes”, said Grant, “lick em tomorrow though.” |  |  |  |
| Leander Stillwell  Actor - | "Never to me was the sight of reinforcing legions so welcome as on that Sunday evening when Buell's advance column deployed on the bluffs of Pittsburg landing." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | During the night, Buell's army finally arrived.  The union men marched ashore as a band played Dixie.  At dawn, the Union Force, now 70,000 strong, drove into Beauregard's 30,000.  The confederates fell back, counterattacked, fell back again, and began to withdraw.  The union held the field.  Covering the confederate retreat was Nathan Bedford Forrest, who now turned to lead one last cavalry charge, headlong into the pursuing northern army. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | “He landed square in the main body of the union troops.  He was surrounded by one gray uniform in a sea of blue,  And they began to holler, Kill him. Kill the goddamn rebel. Knock him off his horse.  And one soldier did, stick his rifle out into Forrest's side, and pulled the trigger.  It lifted Forrest clear off the saddle with the impact of the bullet.  And Forrest, meantime, was slashing with his saber, his horse was kicking and turning.  And Forrest sawed him around and got him clear and took off.  And they were shooting after him, so he reached down and grabbed one Union soldier and swung him up behind him, on the crux of his horse, to use as a shield.  And when he got out of range, he threw the man off, and rode back to join his command.  That was the last shot fired in the battle of Shiloh. |  |  | 02:19:59 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | “The ground”, Grant said, “was so covered with dead, that it would have been possible to walk across the clearing In any direction, stepping on dead bodies without a foot touching the ground”. |  |  |  |
| Leander Stillwell  Actor - | "When the grave was ready, we placed the bodies therein, two deep.  All the monument reared to those brave men was a board upon which I cut with my pocket knife the words 125 rebels." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | 2,477 men were killed at Shiloh.  There were 23,000 casualties overall  More than all the American casualties, in all previous American wars combined.  And it was only the beginning. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | Shiloh had the same number of casualties as Waterloo.  And yet, when it was fought, there were another 20 Waterloos to follow.  And Grant, shortly before Shiloh, said, "I consider this war practically over, they're ready to give up."  And the day after Shiloh, he said, “I saw it was going to have to be a war of conquest, if we were to win."  Shiloh did that,  And it sobered the nation up something awful, into the realization that they had a very bloody affair on their hands.  And it called for a huge reassessment of what this thing was going to be. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Years afterward, a Union Veteran said, “The most a soldier could say of any fight was ‘I was worse scared than I was at Shiloh’."  Shiloh is a Hebrew word meaning "place of peace." |  |  |  |
| Henry  Adams  Actor - | "April 11, 1862.  I firmly believe, that before many centuries more, science will be the master of man.  The engines he will have invented, will be beyond his strength to control.  Someday science, shall have the existence of mankind in its power, and the human race commit suicide, by blowing up the world."  Henry Adams. |  |  | 02:22:46 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The armies that U.S. Grant and George McClellan led, were the best-equipped in history.  The productive capacity and technical ingenuity of the North, were now focused on weapons.  And the civil war would see the first railroad artillery, the first land mines and telescopic sights, the first military telegraphs.  In 1862 alone, 240 patents were issued for military weapons.  Lincoln was fascinated by new weaponry.  He personally tested new rifles, and ordered up 10 Union repeating guns, forerunners of the machine gun.  But he passed up a scheme to manufacture canoe-shaped footwear for walking on water, and tactfully declined a herd of war elephants offered by the King of Siam. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | Oh, they had many crazy ideas, along with some good ones.  There was one plan to use two cannon, each with a cannonball, and the two cannonballs connected by a chain.  And you would fire the two cannons at the same time, and the balls would go out, and the chain between them would just cut a swath through everything in their way.  The trouble was, one cannon, of course, went off before the other one did.  Which would the result that the ball went around in a circle from the other cannon. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The most important innovation of the whole war was the rifled musket,  Along with a French refinement Claude Minie’s bullet.  An inch-long lead slug that expanded into the barrel's rifled grooves and spun as it left the muzzle.  The Minie ball could kill at half a mile, and was accurate at 250 yards.  Five times as far as any other one-man weapon.  The age of the bayonet charge had ended.  Though most officers did not yet know it when the war began.  And some had still not learned it, when the war was over. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote -  Historian | It was brutal stuff.  The reason for the high casualties is really quite simple. The weapons were way ahead of the tactics.  The rifle itself. It threw a 53 caliber soft lead bullet, at a low muzzle velocity.  And when it hit, the reason there were so many amputations, was that If you got hit here, it didn't clip your bone the way the modern steel-jacketed bullet does.  You didn't have any bone from here to here.  They had no choice but to take the arm off.  And you'll see pictures of the dead on the battlefield with their clothes in disarray, as if someone had been going through rifling their bodies. That was the men themselves, tearing their clothes up, to see where the wound was.  They knew perfectly well If they were gut shot, they'd die. |  |  | 02:25.37 |
| Ulysses S.  Grant -  Actor | "April 25, 1862, Pittsburg landing, Tennessee.  Dear Julia:  I'm no longer boss. General Halleck is here, and I'm truly glad of it.  I hope the papers will let me alone in the future.  If the papers only knew how little ambition I have, outside of putting down this rebellion, and getting back once more to live quietly and unobtrusively with my family. I think they would say fewer falsehoods."  Ulysses S. Grant |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Ulysses S. Grant's reward for the costly Union victory at Shiloh was to be removed from field command.  Grant's superior was General Henry Wager Halleck. A calculating administrator who was jealous of Grant's success, and anxious to get rid of his chief rival.  After the battle of Fort Donelson, he spread rumors grant was drinking. After the fearful losses at Shiloh, he had grant reassigned.  Grant decided to quit, but his friend William Tecumseh Sherman talked him out of it.  "You could not be quiet at home for a week," he said, "when armies are moving."  Grant and Sherman were both Ohio boys, and West Pointers, who were fond of cigars, scorned pomp and politics, and had fared poorly in civilian life.  Grant enjoyed Sherman's rapid-fire brilliance, and was grateful for the dispatch with which he carried out every order. Sherman admired his friend's cool temper, his steadiness in the midst of crisis, and what he called Grant's "simple faith in success."  They trusted each other. |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman  Actor - | "I'm a damned sight smarter than Grant.  I know more about organization, supply, and administration, and about everything else than he does.  But I'll tell you where he beats me, and where he beats the world  He don't care a damn for what the enemy does out of his sight.  But it scares me like hell."  William Tecumseh Sherman. |  |  | 02:28:19 |
| Frederick Douglass  Actor - | "Any attempt now to separate the freedom of the slave, from the victory of the government, any attempt to secure peace to the whites, while leaving the blacks in chains, will be labor lost.  The American people, and the government at Washington may refuse to recognize it for a time, but the inexorable logic of events, will force it upon them in the end,  That the war now being waged, in this land, Is a war for and against slavery."  Frederick Douglass. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Letter by letter, speech by speech, month after month, Frederick Douglass tirelessly lobbied the government in Washington.  Urging Lincoln to emancipate the slaves.  But the president still insisted the war was being fought for Union, and publicly avoided Douglass and the debate. |  |  |  |
| Frederick Douglass  Actor - | "Our southern friends tell us the north is fighting for negroes.  Our union friends says they're not fighting to free the negroes, but for the Union.  Very well.  Let the whites fight for what they want, we negroes fight for what we want.  Liberty must take the day, nothing shorter.  We care nothing about the Union.  We’ve been in it slaves, over 250 years." |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman  Actor - | "Whatever nation gets the control of the Ohio, Mississippi, and Missouri rivers will control the continent."  William Tecumseh Sherman. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Out west, Union Naval strategy was straightforward  Seize control of the Mississippi and cut the Confederacy in two.  On April 7, Union gunboats and 2,000 troops took the Confederate fortress at Island Number 10, near New Madrid, Missouri, leaving the river open as far south as Memphis.  Two months later, Memphis fell. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On the night of April 24, a 60-year-old flag officer, David G. Farragut, started north up the Mississippi, intent on capturing New Orleans.  But first, he had to get by the heavy guns at Forts Jackson and St. Phillips, 70 miles below the city.  When the moon rose, the Confederates opened fire, and sent blazing rafts drifting into the Union fleet.  The first vessel was hit 42 times.  Farragut's own flagship was set on fire.  But somehow the entire fleet made it past the Forts.  New Orleans surrendered the next day.  Farragut had the American flag raised over city hall. |  |  | 02:31:31 |
| Mary Chesnut  Actor - | "New Orleans gone.  And with it, the Confederacy?  Are we not cut in two?  That Mississippi ruins us, if lost."  Mary Chesnut. |  |  |  |
| James  Jackson  Actor- | "Tupelo, Mississippi.  I don't know how the war will be decided if England and France don't interfere and stop the war, and if the Confederacy has to gain her independence by fighting.  I am afraid she will have to give it up, for there are so few provisions in this portion of the Confederacy."  James Jackson. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In the following months, Farragut's fleet gained control of the southern Mississippi as far north as Baton Rouge and Natchez.  But the North did not possess the whole river.  The Confederate stronghold at Vicksburg still held. |  |  |  |
| Mary Chesnut  Actor - | "Republics. Everybody jawing. Everybody putting their mouths in.  Nothing’s sacred. All confusion of babble.  Republics can't carry on war. Hurrah for a strong one-man government."  Mary Chesnut. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | From the southern White House in Richmond, Jefferson Davis struggled to keep the war effort on track.  Southern industry grew, driven by necessity.  The Confederate government, founded on the principle of decentralization, found itself controlling everything from the forging of cannon at the big Tredegar iron works in Richmond, to the daily output of the women who spun cloth for uniforms in their parlors. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In Charleston, Mary Chesnut's circle knit socks for Stonewall Jackson's entire brigade.  Women wove boots from palmetto fronds, and saved their urine from which to distill niter for gunpowder.  Southerners grew poppies to yield opium, and made coffee from corn and peas, hypodermic needles from thorns, rope from Spanish moss.  But the Confederate Army was shrinking.  The term of enlistment for the earliest volunteers was up in the spring.  Most men planned to go home.  In April, at the insistence of Jefferson Davis, the Confederate Congress passed two laws.  One extended all enlistments for the duration, the other required all able-bodied white men between 18 and 35 to serve for 3 years.  It was the first national draft in American history. |  |  | 02:34:27 |
| Joseph E.  Brown  Actor - | "The conscription act, at one fell swoop, strikes down the sovereignty of the states, tramples upon the constitutional rights and personal liberty of the citizens.  And it arms the president with imperial powers."  Governor Joseph E. Brown of Georgia. |  |  |  |
| Mary Chesnut  Actor - | "Mrs. Davis is being utterly upset.  She is beginning to hear the carping and faultfinding to which the president is subjected.  There must be an opposition in a free country.  But it is very uncomfortable."  Mary Chesnut. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Veterans were especially resentful because potential draftees who owned 20 slaves or more could be exempted. |  |  |  |
| Sam  Watkins  Actor - | "A law was made allowing every person who owned 20 negroes to go home.  It gave us the blues.  We wanted 20 negroes.  There was raise the howl of rich man's war, poor man's fight!  From this time on, till the end of the war, a soldier was simply a machine, a conscript.  All our pride and valor had gone, and we were sick of war, and cursed the southern Confederacy."  Sam Watkins. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Nearly half the southerners eligible for the new draft, failed to sign up. |  |  |  |
| Alexander M.  Stewart  Actor - | "April 21st.  Sixteen days have now been spent in this place.  Our grand army has again come to a halt.  Under the dry pine leaves where we encamp, a great secesh army of wood ticks have wintered.  Few are so happy as not to find half a dozen of these villainous bloodsuckers sticking in his flesh every morning."  Chaplain A.M. Stewart. |  |  | 02:36:55 |
| Elisha  Hunt  Rhodes  Actor- | "The firing from the confederate lines was of little consequence, not amounting to over 10 or 12 artillery shots each day.  A number of these being directed at the huge balloon which went up daily from General Fitzjohn's headquarters.” |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman  Actor - | “When about 100 feet above the ground, the general sailed off toward Richmond at a greater speed than the Army of the Potomac is moving.  He had sufficient calmness to pull the valve rope and gradually descended about 3 miles from camp.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On the peninsula, General George McClellan's huge army sat in front of the smaller rebel force at Yorktown.  For almost a month it rained 2 out of every 3 days.  Hundreds fell ill. |  |  |  |
| George  McClellan  Actor- | “I feel that the fate of a nation depends on me.  And that I have not one single friend at the seat of government."  George McClellan. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | McClellan had moved more than 90 federal guns to Yorktown by May 3rd.  Some so massive that it took 100 horses to haul them up along hastily constructed timber highways, called corduroy roads.  McClellan finally decided to act, and carefully planned a massive bombardment for May 5th.  But on the night of the 3rd, General McGruder's Confederate batteries suddenly intensified their fire.  McClellan braced for an attack.  But the next morning, the Confederates had vanished.  Disbelieving federal troops edged into the deserted southern camps.  McGruder had packed up his show and moved on.  But McClellan declared it a union victory. |  |  |  |
| George  McClellan  Actor - | "The success is brilliant, and you may rest assured that its effects will be of the greatest importance.  There shall be no delay in following up the rebels.” |  |  | 02:39:34 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Union men now cautiously followed the rebel army west towards Richmond. |  |  |  |
| Elisha  Hunt  Rhodes  Actor - | "May 20.  Richmond is just 9 miles off.  The negroes are delighted to see us, but the whites look as if they would like to kill us."  Elisha Hunt Rhodes. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “From McClellan's lines, you could hear the bells of Richmond tolling.  You could hear the church bells and the public clocks striking.  He was that close.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | A worried Jefferson Davis now prepared for a siege of Richmond.  Relying more and more on the advice of his close military adviser, Robert E. Lee.  When Davis asked where Lee thought the south's next defensive line should be drawn, once Richmond fell, Lee said, "Richmond must not fall. It shall not be given up."  Still, George McClellan refused to attack.  Though his army still outnumbered the rebels, he remained convinced the opposite was true.  One observer noted that McClellan had a particular faculty for "realizing hallucinations."  He demanded another 40,000 men. |  |  |  |
| Edwin M.  Stanton  Actor - | "If he had a million men, he would swear the enemy had two million, and then he would sit down in the mud and yell for 3."  Edwin M. Stanton. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | With the year half gone, the Union's grand strategy had stalled.  The western campaign begun by U.S. Grant had ground to a halt in north Mississippi.  And McClellan's mighty forces were paralyzed in front of Richmond.  There was worse to come.  The killing that would soon break out in Virginia, would continue all year, and come to a climax along a tiny creek in western Maryland, called the Antietam. |  |  |  |
| Frederick  Douglass  Actor - | "We talk of the irrepressible conflict and practically give the lie to our talk.  We wage war against slaveholding rebels and yet protect and augment the motive which has moved the slaveholders to rebellion.  We strike at the effect "And leave the cause unharmed.  Fire will not burn it out of us,  Water cannot wash it out of us.  That this war with the slaveholders can never be brought to a desirable termination until slavery, the guilty cause of all our national troubles, has been totally and forever abolished."  Frederick Douglass. |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| **Chapter / Episode 3 – Forever Free: 1862** | | | | |
| Unknown  Actor- | Private Edwin Tennison.  Killed in action at Malvern Hill.  July 1, 1862. |  |  | 02:47:35 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | During the Civil War, photographers followed the armies everywhere, to make proud portraits for the boys to send home, and to capture as much of the action, as cumbersome equipment and slow shutter speeds allowed.  Near the battle of Fair Oaks, Virginia, Captain George Armstrong Custer, paused to have his picture taken with J. B. Washington, a close friend and classmate from West Point, now a Confederate Lieutenant, who had just that morning been captured by federal pickets.  As 1862 dragged on, the character of the war was changing, and much of the country was changing with it.  By 1862, more than a million farm workers had enlisted in the Union army,  Travelers in the Midwest saw more women at work in the fields than men.  The year, which had begun so promisingly for the North, had now gone awry.  U.S. Grant's triumphs at Donelson and Shiloh, were being overshadowed by disasters in the East.  In Virginia, Union General George McClellan's Army sat outside Richmond,  Its commander in possession of vastly greater forces, but without the will to fight.  Meanwhile, the Confederacy was beginning to appreciate the brilliance of a new commander, Robert E. Lee, who would soon establish a reputation as one of the greatest military leaders of all time.  And there was still more trouble for the Union.  At Blackburn, England, a public meeting declared that it was impossible for the North to vanquish the South, and called for a negotiated settlement of the war.  With Europe poised to recognize the Confederacy, the unthinkable looked increasingly likely, the Union was going to lose the war. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | "We must change our tactics or lose the game," Abraham Lincoln wrote in 1862.  To Lincoln, it was clear now, that it was no longer possible to restore the old Union.  A new one had to be embraced.  By summer, he knew what tactic was needed, to win the war-- emancipation--but doubted whether he would ever have the political or military opportunity to use it.  "I find it hard to maintain my lively faith in the triumph of the Nation and the law," New York lawyer, George Templeton Strong confided to his diary, "these are the darkest days we have seen since Bull Run."  What no one knew, was that the year would soon see the bloodiest day of the war, and then the brightest. |  |  |  |
| Barbara Fields –  Historian | It could have been a very ugly, filthy war, with no redeeming characteristics at all.  And it was the battle for emancipation, and the people who pushed it forward, the slaves, the free black people, the abolitionists, and a lot of ordinary citizens.  It was they, who ennobled what otherwise would have been meaningless carnage into something higher. |  |  | 02:51:50 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Outside Richmond, George McClellan continued to call anxiously for more troops, though his 110,000-man force already greatly outnumbered Joseph Johnston's army.  Meanwhile, west of the Blue Ridge, in the Shenandoah valley, General Thomas J. Jackson, was keeping three federal armies busy. |  |  |  |
| Thomas J.  Jackson –  Actor | "Always mystify, mislead, and surprise the enemy.  And when you strike and overcome him, never let up in the pursuit.  Never fight against heavy odds, if you can hurl your force on only a part of your enemy and crush it.  A small army may thus destroy a large one, and repeated victory will make it invincible."  General T.J. Jackson. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | He was a true eccentric.  He believed that if he had pepper in his food, it would make his left leg ache.  He would never mail a letter, that would be in transit on a Sunday.  He was a strict observer of the Sabbath.  Yet so many of his battles were fought on Sundays, that soldiers began to believe he fought on Sunday, because the Lord would be even more with him. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Jackson was a pious, blue-eyed killer, utterly untroubled by the likelihood of death.  It was a man's "entire duty," he said, "to pray and fight." |  |  |  |
| Sam  Watkins –  Actor | "He would have a man shot at the drop of a hat,  And he'd drop it himself."  Sam Watkins. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | He had a strange quality of overlooking suffering.  It was during one of the battles, he had a young courier, and Jackson looked around for him, and he wasn't there.  And He said, "where is lieutenant so-and-so?"  They said, "he was killed General."  And Jackson said, "very commendable, very commendable"  And then put him out of his mind. |  |  |  |
| Unknown  Confederate  Actor - | "All old Jackson gave us was a musket, 100 rounds, and a gum blanket.  And he drove us like hell." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | His men did not love him. He was too grim, too remote, and he demanded too much.  Some thought him mad.  He believed that keeping one hand in the air could stop him from going out of balance.  And he sucked constantly on lemons, even in the midst of battle.  Others worried that his religious fervor would cloud his judgment.  His command, Jackson said, was "an Army of the living God, as well as of its country."  But his men were willing to endure the 36-mile-a-day marches he demanded, because he brought them victories.  It was Jackson's duty in the Shenandoah, to unsettle the Union, and keep Washington from reinforcing McClellan.  Operating in the midst of three Federal armies, each with more men than his own force of 17,000, Jackson lashed out at one army and then another.  Armed with a detailed map that stretched 8 1/2 feet, he surprised them every time.  At Winchester, Front Royal, Cross Keys, Port Republic, and a half dozen other places.  After routing Nathaniel Banks' Army at the battle of Winchester, Jackson chased it all the way to the Potomac.  "Stop, men!" Banks shouted to his retreating troops, "don't you love your country?" "Yes, by God," said one, "and I'm trying to get back to it just as fast as I can."  Jackson's valley campaign was a triumph.  In just over a month, his men marched almost 400 miles, inflicted 7,000 casualties, seized huge quantities of badly needed supplies, and kept almost 40,000 federal troops off the peninsula. |  |  |  |
| Thomas J.  Jackson  Actor – | "He who does not see the hand of God in this is blind, sir, blind!" |  |  |  |
| William E.  Gladstone –  Actor | "There is no doubt that Jefferson Davis, and other leaders of the South, have made an army, they are making, it appears, a navy, and they have made what is more, than either, they have made a nation.  We may anticipate with certainty, the success of the Southern States."  William E. Gladstone. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Confederate gospel held that Britain and France could not survive without southern cotton.  Before long, one or both would surely intervene on behalf of the Confederacy, to end the Union blockade.  To put more pressure on Europe, the Confederates cut cotton production ninety percent.  2.5 million bales were burned, or left to rot, on Confederate wharves to keep it out of English hands.  Now, in addition to directing a war at home, Lincoln had to find a way to keep Europe from coming in on the side of the South.  And increasingly, in the North, there was pressure for emancipation.  And it came from unlikely people in unlikely places.  On May 1, 1862, Lincoln named General Benjamin F. Butler, Military Governor of occupied New Orleans.  Butler went right to work.  He hanged a man suspected of having desecrated the American flag.  He closed a secessionist newspaper, confiscated the property of citizens who refused to swear allegiance to the Union, and was given the scornful nickname "spoons" for allegedly pocketing silverware.  New Orleans women routinely insulted his troops.  When a woman in the French quarter leaned from a window to dump her chamber pot on the head of Admiral Farragut, Butler issued General Order Number 28. |  |  | 02:57:55 |
| Benjamin  Butler –  Actor | "As the officers and soldiers of the United States, have been subject to repeated insults from the women calling themselves ladies of New Orleans,  it is ordered that, hereafter, when any female shall, by word, gesture, or movement, insult or show contempt for any officer or soldier of the United States, she shall be regarded and held liable to be treated as a woman of the town, plying her avocation."  General Benjamin Butler. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Southerners were outraged and called Butler "The Beast."  A New Orleans entrepreneur sold chamber pots featuring Butler's portrait inside the bowl.  In Charleston, South Carolina, a private citizen offered a $10,000 reward  for the capture of "Beast" Ben Butler--  Dead or alive.  But the harassment of his men stopped. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | With the Union Army so near, unrest on Louisiana plantations increased.  When desperate slave owners began complaining of rebellious blacks, Butler declared the planters disloyal to the Union, then took away their slaves.  "Go to the Yankees," one slave-holder told his slaves, "they are kings here now." |  |  |  |
| Susan King Taylor -  Actor | "I have been reading so much about the Yankees, I was very anxious to see them.  The whites would tell their colored people not to go to the Yankees, for they would harness them to carts, and make them pull the carts around, in place of horses.  I asked grandmother one day if this was true.  She replied, “certainly not, that the white people did not want slaves to go over to the Yankees, and told them these things to frighten them.”  I wanted to see those wonderful Yankees so much, as I heard my parents say that the Yankees was going to set all the slaves free."  Susan King Taylor |  |  | 03:01:19 |
| Barbara Fields –  Historian | The slaves understood that that war was about slavery before it was a war.  If they made a nuisance for the army, and an issue the army had to deal with.  If the army had to deal with it, the War Department had to deal with it. If the War Department had to deal with it, then Congress had to deal with it.  That means that every fugitive slave who made a nuisance of himself to the local commander, eventually made a figure of himself to the Congress of the United States. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Congress, controlled by Republicans, now forbade the army to return slaves to their masters.  And in June, it outlawed slavery in the territories, finally reversing the old Dred Scott decision. |  |  |  |
| George  Templeton  Strong –  Actor | "Only the damnedest of damned abolitionists dreamed of such things a year ago.  John Brown's soul is marching on. With the people after it."  George Templeton Strong. |  |  |  |
| Salmon P.  Chase –  Actor | "The slavery question perplexes the president almost as much as ever.  And yet, I think he is about to emerge from the obscurities where he has been groping, into somewhat clearer light.  So, you see, the man moves."  Salmon P. Chase |  |  |  |
| Abraham  Lincoln –  Actor | “July 4, 1862.  I would do it, if I were not afraid that half the officers would fling down their arms and three more states would rise." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Lincoln continued to back a plan to pay $400 for every slave freed, and then encourage the freed men to sail off to a colony in Africa or Central America.  The abolitionist Wendell Phillips, called Abraham Lincoln, “A first-rate second-rate man.” |  |  |  |
| Barbara Fields –  Historian | I lose patience with the argument that because of someone's time, his limitations are therefore excusable or even praiseworthy.  It is not true that it was impossible, in that time and place, to look any higher.  Think of Wendell Phillips, who, commenting on Abraham Lincoln's proposal to colonize black people out of the country, was sarcastic.  He said, "colonize the blacks?  “A man might as well colonize his own hands, or when the robber is in his house, he might as well colonize his revolver." |  |  | 03:03:35 |
| Ralph  Waldo  Emerson  Actor - | “Emancipation is the demand of civilization.  That is a principle.  All else is intrigue."  Ralph Waldo Emerson. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On the Virginia peninsula, the rains came, inundating the bottomlands.  Along the roads outside Richmond, George McClellan's force was divided in two by the flooded Chickahominy River.  The rebels saw their chance, and attacked the smaller force on May 31st.  In the fierce fighting that followed, the Confederates did best near a crossroads called Seven Pines.  The Union Soldiers were most successful at Fair Oaks.  When the battle of Fair Oaks was over, the North had lost 5,000 men, the South, 6,000, and it hadn't changed a thing.  Joseph Johnston, the overall confederate commander, was himself severely wounded and carried from the field. |  |  |  |
| Joseph  Johnston –  Actor | "The shot that struck me down was the best ever fired for the Confederacy, for I possessed in no degree the confidence of the government, and now a man who does enjoy it, will succeed me, and be able to accomplish what I never could." |  |  |  |
| Sam  Watkins  Actor - | "His name might be audacity.  He will take more chances, and take them quicker, than any other general in this country, North or South. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Now for the first time in the war, Robert E. Lee was placed at the head of a major army. |  |  |  |
| George  McClellan  Actor- | "I prefer Lee to Johnston.  Lee is too cautious, and weak under grave responsibility.  Personally brave and energetic to a fault, he is yet wanting in moral firmness when pressed by heavy responsibility."  George McClellan. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | McClellan completely misjudged the new Confederate commander.  Robert E. Lee was a fighter.  Wanting to get at the union men who had dared invade his state, Lee renamed his force the Army of Northern Virginia, seized the initiative, and never let it go.  First, Lee sent his cavalry chief, Jeb Stuart, to reconnoiter McClellan's forces.  Stuart now led 1,200 troopers on a pounding three-day, 150-mile ride around McClellan's huge army.  His men burned Federal camps, cut down telegraph poles, took prisoners and horses and mules, and slowed only to accept bouquets and kisses from women along the way.  In vain pursuit was Stuart's own father-in-law, who had stayed loyal to the Union and become a general.  A decision Stuart said he would "regret but once, and that will be continuously."  Throughout the whole campaign, Lee carefully observed McClellan's tentative advance up the peninsula.  As McClellan was preparing at last to lay siege to Richmond, Lee surprised him first, at Mechanicsville on June 26th.  It was a daring move.  Defying all military convention, Lee divided his tiny force, and then attacked the huge Union army, gambling that McClellan would be too cautious to move into Richmond.  Lee's assault didn't work. He lost 1,500 men at Mechanicsville, but he would not let up.  Determined to drive McClellan out of Virginia, Lee kept on the attack.  And so it went.  For seven days, the two armies clashed.  From Gaine's Mill, from Savage's Station to Frayser's farm, and Malvern hill, where Federal gunners stopped the Confederates who came at them up the long slope. |  |  | 03:06:15 |
| William Averell -  Actor | "Our ears had been filled all night with agonizing cries before the fog was lifted.  Now our eyes saw that 5,000 dead or wounded men were on the ground.  A third of them were dead or dying, but enough of them were alive and moving to give the field a singular crawling effect." |  |  |  |
| Sara Agnes  Rice Pryor –  Actor | “Each of the battles of those seven days brought a harvest of wounded to our hospital.  I used to veil myself closely as i walked to and from my hotel, that i might shut out the dreadful sights.  Once i did see one of those dreadful wagons.  In it, a stiff arm was raised, and it shook as it was driven down the street, as though the dead owner appealed to heaven for vengeance." |  |  | 03:08:49 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | All but one of the battles of the seven days were Union victories.  Yet McClellan treated them as defeats.  Continuing to back down until he reached the safety of Federal gunboats at Harrison's Landing on the James River, Union officers urged a counterattack.  Lee had lost 20,000 men.  McClellan refused.  One officer suggested his commander was motivated either by "cowardice or treason."  In just one week, Lee had completely unnerved the Union general, and demonstrated for the first time, the strengths that would make him a legend.  Surprise, audacity, and an eerie ability to read his opponent's mind.  In just seven days, McClellan had been totally out-Generaled. |  |  |  |
| George McClellan  Actor - | "I am tired of the sickening sight of the battlefield, with its mangled corpses and poor suffering wounded.  Victory has no charms for me, when purchased at such cost." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On July 7th, an exasperated Lincoln sailed down to see his commanding general.  He had not lost, McClellan insisted, he had merely failed to win.  He needed 50,000 more men, or perhaps 100,000.  No such numbers were available, Lincoln told him. If McClellan did not feel he could resume the offensive, his men would be withdrawn from the peninsula. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln –  Actor | "If I gave McClellan the men he asks for, they couldn't find room to lie down. They'd have to sleep standing up.  Sending men to that army is like shoveling fleas across a barnyard.  Not half of them get there." |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes –  Actor | "September 3.  Today we took a steamer and went up the Potomac past Washington and landed at Georgetown.  It is hard to have reached the point we started from last March, and Richmond is still the rebel capital."  Elisha Hunt Rhodes. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Union guns battered Fort Pulaski, Georgia, into surrendering and choked off the savannah river to Southern ships.  There was fighting at Foyt's Plantation, North Carolina, St. Andrew's Bay, Florida, Wartrace, Tennessee, and at Albuquerque, in far-off New Mexico territory. |  |  | 03:12:28 |
| Charles Francis Adams –  Actor | "Sea Islands, Georgia.  Here I am, surrounded by troopers, missionaries, contrabands, cotton fields, and serpents, in a summer climate, disgusted with all things military, and fighting off malaria with whiskey and tobacco.  No man seems to realize that here in this little island, all around us, has begun the solution of the tremendous nigger question.  Some 10,000 former slaves are thrown upon the hands of the unfortunate government.  They are the forerunners of hundreds of thousands more."  Lieutenant Charles Francis Adams. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Stationed in places like Hilton Head and Beaufort, New Englanders got their first tasted the tropics.  None of the Second Massachusetts had ever seen a palm tree before.  When Union forces took parts of the South Carolina coast, plantation owners fled, leaving behind empty houses and 10,000 slaves.  Missionaries, teachers, and other volunteers soon arrived to help the newly-liberated.  "We have come to do antislavery work," one teacher wrote, "we think it noble work, and we will do it nobly." |  |  |  |
| John  Boston  Actor - | "My dear wife,  This day I can address you, thank God, as a free man.  I had a little trouble getting away, but as the Lord led the children of Israel to the land of Canaan, so he led me to a land where freedom will reign in spite of earth and hell.  My dear, I trust the time will come when we will meet again and if we don't meet on earth, we will meet in heaven, where Jesus reigns.  Dear wife, I must close. Rest yourself contented. I am now free.  Your affectionate husband.  Kiss Daniel for me."  John Boston. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | At Deer Isle, Maine, people were afraid to go to the post office, where the casualty lists were posted. |  |  |  |
| Ethan A. Brewster –  Actor | "New Berne, North Carolina, March 20, 1862.  To: Mr. John Webster, Jr., Deer Isle, Maine.  Dear Sir:  It is with pain that I have to announce to you the death of your brother, Charles Gray.  By his good conduct and bravery while with me, he had risen to the rank of corporal, and had he lived, I should have promoted him again.  He was shot at the battle of New Berne.  His last words were, we will never give up.  He is buried here.  His effects I will send home at the earliest opportunity.  Yours truly,  E.A.P. Brewster,  Captain, Company A, 23rd Massachusetts.” |  |  | 03:15:14 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Deer Isle had lost its first soldier.  A parcel containing Charles Gray's personal effects arrived in the mail  It contained his hat, promotion papers attesting to his valor, and a cartridge box, in which someone had placed the mangled bullet that killed him.  His mother refused to look at it.  The men of the reduced fishing fleet struggled to harvest a catch.  Wives tended kitchen gardens, and scraped linen for the lint from which army bandages were made.  Soon more bad news arrived.  Private Alex Henderson had died of disease at Fort Jackson, Louisiana, leaving a widow and several children.  At Clarksville, Tennessee, tensions between the town and the occupying Union Army ran high.  Federal troops vandalized Stewart College, wrecking laboratories and stealing books, then set up headquarters there.  Soldiers burst in on a church service, arrested the preacher, commandeered horses, and forced reluctant parishioners to take a loyalty oath.  As much as possible, the residents stayed at home. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “The answer a Southerner would give you as to, “why are you fighting" if you were a Notherner.  He would say, "'cause you're down here."  He was being invaded, and he fought, as he thought, to defend his home.  Lincoln had a more difficult job, of sending men out to shoot up somebody else's home.  And he had to unite them before he could do that.  And his way of doing it was double.  One was to say that the republic must be preserved, not split in two. That was one.  And the other one he gave them as a cause, the freeing of the slaves. |  |  | 03:17:34 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On the morning of July 22, 1862, the president called a cabinet meeting.  What he said took everyone by surprise.  After long thought, he told them, he had decided to emancipate the slaves. |  |  |  |
| James W.  Symington -  Former Member of Congress / Historian | It was a stunning moment.  It was against everything Lincoln had promised the Republicans, and indeed the country, that he would not become an abolitionist, that he would not strike at slavery where it existed.  And here suddenly, he was changing the character of the war. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | But secretary of State Seward worried that until the army had won a real victory, emancipation would seem like the last shriek, on the retreat.  Lincoln agreed to wait for a victory. |  |  |  |
| Barbara Fields - Historian | It's hard to separate one issue from another.  Obviously, Lincoln had to win the war.  He had to keep his respectability, as president of a country, that would not allow itself to be defeated by a group of rebels.  That was always an issue, and it was especially an issue in 1862.  He could not let himself be made a fool, and the Union be made a fool, by standing up for principles that could not be vindicated on the battlefield. |  |  |  |
| Unknown Woman Signing | “I have read a fiery gospel, within burnished rows of steel,  As ye deal with my contemners, so with you my grace shall deal,  Let the hero born of woman, crush the serpent with his heel,  Since God is marching on.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Desperate for a victory, Lincoln removed McClellan, and put tall, bombastic John Pope in command.  Pope so often bragged that his headquarters were in the saddle, people began to say he had his headquarters where his hindquarters should have been. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | Lincoln was warned at the start that Pope couldn't be trusted with telling the truth.  Lincoln said, "I've known the popes back in Illinois, they're all liars and braggarts, but I don't know why a liar and a braggart shouldn't make a good general." |  |  | 03:20:53 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Pope wasted no time, charging into Northern Virginia, after the rebel armies.  But he was in trouble from the start.  First, Stonewall Jackson fought him to a stand-off, at Cedar Mountain.  Jeb Stuart hit him next, raiding his headquarters, and getting away with $35,000 in cash, and the Union commander's dress coat.  Then the rebels simply disappeared.  It took Pope two days to find them, dug in along an abandoned railroad, overlooking the old bull run battlefield.  On August 29th, Pope attacked, promising to "bag the whole crowd."  But the confederates held, Jackson's men hurling rocks when ammunition ran low. At 2:00 the next afternoon, Confederate General James Longstreet, sent five divisions storming into the Union flank.  It was another Union disaster.  25,000 men were killed, wounded, or missing, at second Bull Run. Five times the figure that had so horrified the country, the first time North and South fought there.  Lincoln sent Pope west to Minnesota, to deal with an uprising among the Sioux, and reluctantly put George McClellan, back in command.  "We must use the tools we have," Lincoln said.  McClellan told his wife, he’d been called upon to save the country once again. |  |  |  |
| John  Casler –  Actor | "We would ask the North Carolinians if they had any tar and call them tar heels.  They would reply that they were just out, as they'd let us Virginians have all they had to make us stick in the last fight, and call us sore backs, as they'd knocked the skin off our backs running over us to get into battle.  So it would go, but all in the best of humor, knowing that all did their duty."  John Casler,  33rd regiment, Virginia Infantry, Stonewall's Brigade. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | You must remember they were from the same state.  They had followed the same flag.  The battles they had fought in, the names were stitched on that flag.  There was a great deal of unit pride, and I’m sure there was a great deal of sadness, over the losses that they suffered.  But there was a closeness among those men, that came from years of being exposed to the most horrendous warfare that I know of. |  |  |  |
| William Brearley -  Actor | “Dear Father,  The next morning, we had our second battle.  It was rather strange music to hear the balls scream within an inch of my head.  Had a bullet struck me on top of the head, just as i was going to fire, a piece of shell struck my foot. A ball hit my finger, and another hit my thumb.  The firing increased tenfold, then it sounded like the rolls of thunder, and all the time every man shouting as loud as he could.  I got rather more excited than I wish to again." |  |  | 03:24:02 |
| Sam  Watkins –  Actor | “I saw the body of a man killed the previous day, this morning, and a horrible sight it was.  Such sights do not affect me as they once did.  I cannot describe the change, nor do I know when it took place, yet I know there is a change. I look on the carcass of a man now with pretty much the same feeling as I would were it a horse or a hog." |  |  |  |
| Elisha  Hunt  Rhodes –  Actor | “Sunday a soldier of Company A died and was buried.  Everything went on as if nothing had happened, for death is so common, little sentiment is wasted.  It is not like death at home."  Elisha Hunt Rhodes. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Falling back from the Bull Run battlefield, Union troops skirmished briefly with rebel forces at Falls Church, Virginia, where the men stopped long enough to scribble their names on the chapel walls.  "In great contests," Abraham Lincoln wrote, as the summer waned, "each party claims to act in accordance with the will of God. "Both may be, but one must be, wrong. God cannot be for and against the same thing at the same time." |  |  |  |
| Horace Greeley –  Actor | "August 20, 1862.  An open letter to the president.  We think you are unduly influenced by the counsels of certain fossil politicians hailing from border slave states. We ask you to consider that slavery is everywhere the inciting cause and sustaining base of treason.  It seems to us, the most obvious truth that whatever strengthens or fortifies slavery drives home the wedge intended to divide the Union."  Horace Greeley. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln –  Actor | "August 22nd.  My paramount object in this struggle is to save the Union, and is not either to save or to destroy slavery.  If I could save the Union, without freeing any slave, I would do it. If I could save it by freeing all the slaves, I would do it.  And if I could save it by freeing only some, and leaving others alone, I would also do that." |  |  |  |
| Henry John  Temple,  Third Viscount  Palmerston  Actor - | "It seems to me that time is fast approaching when some joint offer of mediation, by England, France, and Russia, might be made with some prospect of success, to the combatants in North America.  The proposal would naturally be made to both North and South. If both accepted, we should recommend an armistice and cessation of blockades, with a view to negotiation on the basis of separation."  Prime Minister Palmerston. |  |  | 03:27:02 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Lincoln had to have a victory. |  |  |  |
| Robert E.  Lee –  Actor | “September 3, 1862.  The present seems to be the most propitious time since the commencement of the war, for the Confederate Army to enter Maryland."  Robert E. Lee. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The brilliant Southern victories of spring and summer had brought Lee's army international renown.  “One more successful campaign”, he wrote Jefferson Davis, “would force Europe to recognize the Confederacy”.  Now, for the first time, Lee led 40,000 soldiers across the Potomac and onto Union soil. |  |  |  |
| Kate  Union Supporter –  Actor | "This body of men moving along with no order, their guns carried in every fashion, no two dressed alike, their officers hardly distinguishable from the privates.  Were these the men that had driven back again and again our splendid legions?  They were the dirtiest men I ever saw,  A most ragged, lean, and hungry set of wolves.  Yet there was a dash about them that the northern men lacked." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Lee's target was the federal rail center at Harrisburg, Pennsylvania.  Hoping Marylanders would rise up against the Union, he instructed his men to sing Maryland, my Maryland, as they marched. It didn't work.  Most residents of the small towns stayed fearfully behind closed doors. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Then, on September 13th, in a meadow near Frederick, a Union soldier found three cigars wrapped in a piece of paper. It was a copy of Lee's battle plans, accidentally left behind.  McClellan now knew Lee had divided his army, sending one part off to seize Harpers Ferry. McClellan had in his hands the instrument with which to destroy Lee. Still, he did nothing, for eighteen crucial hours.  On September 15th, Lee and his Confederates took up positions along the crest of a three-mile ridge just east of the town of Sharpsburg, and only 52 miles from Washington.  The Potomac was at their back. In front, ran a creek called Antietam. |  |  |  |
| James Longstreet  Actor - | "On the forenoon of the 15th, the blue uniforms of the Federals appeared among the trees that crowned the heights on the eastern bank of the Antietam.  The number increased, and larger and larger grew the field of blue, until it stretched as far as the eye could see.  And from the tops of the mountains down to the edges of the stream, gathered the great army of McClellan."  General James Longstreet. |  |  | 03:30:12 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Had McClellan hurled his army at the Confederates that day, the war might have ended, but he did not.  "There was a single item in our advantage," an aide to Lee remembered, "but it was an important one. McClellan had brought superior forces to Sharpsburg," the aide conceded, "but he had also brought himself." |  |  |  |
| Edward Hastings Ripley –  Actor | “September 16th  That night, I lay beside the Charlestown Pike and watched until morning, the grimy columns come pouring up from the pontoons.  It was a weird, uncanny sight and drove sleep from my eyes. It was something demon-like, a scene from an inferno.  They were silent as ghosts, ruthless and rushing in their speed, ragged, earth-colored, disheveled, and devilish.  The shuffle of their badly shod feet on the hard surface of the pike was so rapid as to be continuous, like the hiss of a great serpent.  The spectral, ghostly picture will never be erased from my memory."  Captain Edward Hastings Ripley. |  |  |  |
| Mary Bedinger –  Actor | "As night grew nearer, whispers of a great battle to be fought the next day grew louder, and we shuddered at the prospect, for the battles had come to mean to us, as they never had before, blood, wounds, and death.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The battle that began the next day was really three battles.  The first began at 6 a.m, on Lee's left, where a Federal force charged along the Hagerstown Pike, to attack Stonewall Jackson's men, hidden in woods beyond a big cornfield.  The Union objective was a plateau, edged with artillery, on which stood a small whitewashed church, built by a German Baptist pacifist sect, the Dunkards, for whom even a steeple was thought immodest.  The Union field commander was Major General Joe Hooker, a profane and hard-drinking Massachusetts soldier, known as fighting Joe.  As Hooker cautiously advanced, he noticed the glint of bayonets in the cornfield and ordered four batteries to fire into it.  The rebels countercharged.  The battle surged back and forth across the cornfield 15 times.  In a matter of minutes, the 12th Massachusetts lost 224 of 334 men.  Hooker himself was carried from the field, shot through the foot. |  |  |  |
| Rufus  Dawes –  Actor | "The men are loading and firing with demoniacal fury, and shouting and laughing hysterically, and the whole field before us is covered with rebels fleeing for life Into the woods." |  |  | 03:33:37 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Hooker's men were closing in the Dunkard church.  At that moment, Stonewall Jackson sent in his last reserves, John Bell Hood's division, fierce fighters at any time, but now enraged at having missed breakfast, which had promised to be their first real meal in days.  Their first volley was "like a scythe running through our line," one Union survivor remembered.  And then the Confederate counterattack came on. |  |  |  |
| Joseph Hooker –  Actor | "Every stalk of corn was cut as closely as could have been done with a knife, and the slain lay in rows, precisely as they had stood in their ranks a few moments before."  Joseph Hooker. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Northern troops ran back through the cornfield.  Hood's men ran after them, but were stopped by a hail of shells and Federal reinforcements.  When the Confederates finally withdrew, one officer asked Hood where his division was.  "Dead on the field," he answered. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes  Actor - | "I have never in my soldier's life seen such a sight.  The dead and wounded covered the ground. In one spot, a rebel officer and 20 men lay near a wreck of a battery.  It is said Battery A, 1st Rhode Island Artillery, did this work."  Elisha Hunt Rhodes. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | By 10 a.m., 8,000 men lay dead or wounded.  Jackson's lines had wavered, but held. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | After his part of the battle was over, Jackson was sitting on his horse, eating a peach, and his medical director, Dr. McGuire, was there.  And he looked out over this field, where there were dead of both sides, littered all over the place.  And as he was eating a peach he said, "God has been very kind to us this day." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The second part of the Battle of Antietam, began at the center of Lee's line, along a sunken country road that now served as a ready-made rifle pit, for two Confederate brigades.  Lee ordered it held at all costs.  General John B. Gordon assured him, "these men are going to stay here, general, till the sun goes down or victory is won."  Then the Union attacked. |  |  |  |
| John B. Gordon –  Actor | "The brave Union commander, superbly mounted, placed himself in front,  while his band cheered them with martial music.  I thought, what a pity to spoil with bullets such a scene of martial beauty."  General John B. Gordon. |  |  | 03:36:50 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Gordon let the blue line get within a few yards, then gave the order to fire.  The Union commander was killed instantly, his men wavered, retreated, then came back at the Confederates five more times.  Gordon was hit twice in the right leg, once in the left arm, a fourth time through the shoulder.  He refused all aid, limping along the line, to steady his men, as the Federals kept coming. |  |  |  |
| John B. Gordon –  Actor | "I was finally shot down by a fifth ball, which struck me squarely in the face.  I fell forward and lay unconscious, with my face in my cap.  I might have smothered in blood, but for a Yankee bullet hole, which let the blood run out." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Still the Confederates held.  Unit after unit of Northern troops fell back from the sheets of Southern fire.  Finally, some New Yorkers managed to find a spot from which they could shoot down on the road's defenders.  The tide of battle turned.  The sunken road, remembered now as bloody lane, rapidly filled with Southern bodies, two and three deep.  The triumphant Federals knelt on top of what one called "this ghastly flooring" to fire at the fleeing survivors.  The Confederate center had splintered.  One more push might have broken it apart.  General McClellan, however, decided it "would not be prudent" to attack again.  All day long, in hastily constructed field hospitals, Clara Barton tended the wounded.  She worked so close to the fighting, that a bullet went through her sleeve and killed a man she was treating. |  |  |  |
| Clara  Barton –  Actor | "I had to wring the blood from the bottom of my clothing before I could step, for the weight about my feet." |  |  |  |
| Matthew J. Grohan  Actor - | "I was lying on my back, supported on my elbows, watching the shells explode overhead and speculating as to how long I could hold up my finger  before it would be shot off, when the order to get up was given”.  I turned over to look at Colonel Kimball, thinking he had become suddenly insane."  Lieutenant Matthew J. Grohan. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The third battle took place on the Confederate right, where the Union army, led by General Burnside's corps, tried to fight its way across a strongly defended stone bridge over Antietam Creek.  Ambrose Burnside was a genial, dapper man, whose distinctive whiskers or sideburns set a fashion.  But “he shrank from responsibility," an admiring fellow officer said, "with sincere modesty."  And he owed his position to his old friend McClellan, who now promised to support his assault across the bridge.  Burnside had 12,500 men against barely 400 Georgians, led by Robert Toombs.  But the Confederates commanded the bluff overlooking the bridge, and poured a relentless, volley of fire down on the Union troops.  It took three hours and three bloody charges for the Federals to cross the creek, and begin fighting their way up the slope towards Sharpsburg.  Seven successive Union color bearers were hit, before the Confederates finally broke, racing back into the town. |  |  | 03:39:39 |
| John  Dooley –  Actor | "Oh, how I ran.  I was afraid of being struck in the back, and I frequently turned around in running so as to avoid, if possible, so disgraceful a wound."  Private John Dooley. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Union victory again seemed certain.  But while the Union troops cheered, the Confederate light division was arriving from Harpers Ferry  3,000 men, footsore from their 17-mile march, but otherwise ready to fight, and commanded by General A.P. Hill, dressed in the red shirt he liked to wear in battle. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | "A.P. Hill is the fightingest division commander in Lee's army.  Hill arrived at another one of those nick-of-the-moment things, and it was the last one.  And it succeeded in throwing Burnside back after he finally got across the bridge." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Hill slammed into the celebrating Union troops.  Burnside begged McClellan to send up the reinforcements he had promised.  McClellan refused.  As night fell, Burnside withdrew to the bridge he fought so hard to seize.  The battle was over.  No ground had been gained. |  |  |  |
| Davey  Thompson –  Actor | "Before the sunlight faded, I walked over the narrow field.  All around lay the Confederate dead, clad in butternut.  As I looked down on the poor pinched faces, all enmity died out.  There was no secession in those rigid forms, nor in those fixed eyes staring at the sky.  Clearly, it was not their war.” |  |  | 03:42:49 |
| Charles Coffin –  Actor | "The sun went down. The thunder died away. The musketry ceased.  Bivouac fires gleamed out as if a great city had lighted its lamps." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | It had been the bloodiest day in American history.  The Union lost 2,108 dead, another 10,293 wounded or missing, double the casualties of D-day 82 years later.  Lee lost fewer men, 10,318 casualties. But that was a quarter of his army. |  |  |  |
| Elisha  Hunt  Rhodes –  Actor | “Why did we not attack them and drive them into the river?  I do not understand these things, but then, I am only a boy."  Elisha Hunt Rhodes. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | McClellan had plenty of reserves waiting outside Sharpsburg.  But he never used them.  Lee, outnumbered 3-to-1, braced for a new attack all the next day.  It never came.  On the 18th, Lee and his army slipped back across the Potomac.  McClellan could claim a victory, but he could have won the war.  Lee's invasion had been halted, he had suffered terrible losses, but his army had not been destroyed. |  |  |  |
| Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain  Actor - | "The causes of the war were wide apart, but the manhood was the same."  Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain  20th Maine. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Held in reserve outside Sharpsburg, the 20th Maine included farmers and lumbermen, seamen and shopkeepers and trappers.  Its colonel was Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain, a 33-year-old professor of rhetoric, oratory, and modern languages at Bowdoin College. Denied a leave of absence to enlist, he applied for a sabbatical to study in Europe, then volunteered.  On paper, his only qualification for command was that he was a gentleman of the highest moral, intellectual, and literary worth.  Chamberlain was still at Sharpsburg when Abraham Lincoln came to see the battlefield. |  |  |  |
| Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain  Actor- | "We could see the deep sadness in the president's face, and feel the burden on his heart, thinking of his commission to save this people, and knowing he could do this no otherwise than as he had been doing, by and through the manliness of these men." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Watching the president review his troops, it seemed to Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain, that a "mystic bond, wonderful in its intensity," joined the men to their commander in chief.  The object of Lincoln's visit was to get McClellan to pursue Lee. |  |  | 03:46:20 |
| Abraham  Lincoln –  Actor | "I came back thinking he would move at once.  When i got home, he argued why he ought not to move.  I peremptorily ordered him to advance.  It was 19 days before he put a man over the river, and nine days longer before he got his army across.  And then he stopped again." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Lincoln, at last, had had enough of George McClellan.  The president relieved him of command permanently. |  |  |  |
| George  McClellan –  Actor | "They have made a great mistake.  Alas, for my poor country." |  |  |  |
| Margaret  Houston –  Actor | "September 21, 1862.  Dear Sam Junior.  A great many of your old friends and schoolmates have died or been killed.  I will merely name, Lem Ambercrombie, Jeff Montgomery, John Garrett, Lem Hatch, John Hill, Proctor Porter, Bill Humes, John White, Walter Maxey, Angus Alston.  Old Mrs. Thomas of our neighborhood has lost five sons.  Your Mother,  Margaret Houston." |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | You do have a big problem when you have units that are from states and counties and even towns.  And one of those regiments can get in a very tight spot in a particular battle, like in the cornfield in Sharpsburg.    And the news may be that there are no more young men in that town.  They're all dead. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In October of 1862, at his New York gallery, Mathew Brady opened an exhibition of photographs, entitled "The Dead of Antietam."  Nothing like them had ever been seen in America before. |  |  |  |
| New York Times Column –  Actor | "The dead of the battlefield come up to us very rarely, even in dreams.  We see the lists in the morning paper at breakfast, but dismiss its recollection with the coffee.  Mr. Mathew Brady has done something to bring to us the terrible reality and earnestness of the war.  If he has not brought bodies and laid them in our dooryards, he has done something very like it." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Against the advice of his advisers, Lincoln reinstated U.S. Grant to field command.  "I can't spare this man," Lincoln said, "he fights."  1,000 miles to the west, Vicksburg, high on a bluff overlooking the Mississippi, remained Confederate.  "Vicksburg," Jefferson Davis said, "is the nail that holds the South's two halves together."  That fall, Grant tried to take the heavily fortified city. He failed. |  |  | 03:49:47 |
| Ed Bearss - Historian | The Confederacy was on the offensive over a 1,000-mile front.  Mr. Gladstone, a power in the English Cabinet, is saying, "Jeff Davis made a navy. He's made an army," and, what's more important, intimating he's made a nation.  But the invasion of Maryland fails. Lee is defeated, and falls back. They lose at Perryville in Kentucky. They lose at Iuka and Corinth in Mississippi. Even Newtonia in Missouri. The Confederate tide rolls back.  Lincoln, as a result of Antietam, converted the war to a higher plane. Again the master politician. He announces a preliminary emancipation proclamation.  Of course, it doesn't free a single slave in revolt. It frees only as a war measure, and only frees slaves in states where the Confederacy is in control. And it will take effect on the first day of January. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln –  Actor | “On the first day of January, in the year of our Lord 1863, all persons held as slaves within any state, or designated part of a state, the people whereof shall then be in rebellion against the United States, shall be then, thenceforth, and forever free.”  Abraham Lincoln. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On September 22nd, just five days after the battle of Antietam, the president issued his emancipation proclamation.  "If my name ever goes into history," Lincoln said, "it will be for this act."  The South was outraged.  Jefferson Davis called it the "most execrable measure recorded in the history of guilty man."  At a Washington dinner, John Hay, the president's 23-year-old secretary, noted "everyone seemed to feel a new sort of exhilarating life. The president's proclamation had freed them, as well as the slaves." |  |  |  |
| John  Hay –  Actor | “It was no longer a question of the Union as it was that was to be re-established. It was the Union as it should be. That is to say, washed clean from its original sin.  We were no longer merely the soldiers of a political controversy. We were now the missionaries of a great work of redemption, the armed liberators of millions.  The war was ennobled. The object was higher. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Abroad, the proclamation had the effect Lincoln had hoped for.  Neither England nor France was willing openly to oppose a United States pledged to end slavery |  |  |  |
| John  Stuart  Mill –  Actor | "The triumph of the Confederacy would be a victory of evil, which would give courage to the enemies of progress, and damp the spirits of friends  all over the civilized world.  The American Civil War is destined to be a turning point, for good or evil,  of the course of human affairs."  John Stuart Mill. |  |  |  |
| Jefferson Davis –  Actor | "Put not your trust in princes, and rest not your hopes on foreign nations.  This war is ours. We must fight it out ourselves."  Jefferson Davis. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | That December, Lincoln spoke to Congress |  |  | 03:54:40 |
| Abraham Lincoln –  Actor | "The dogmas of the quiet past are inadequate to the stormy present.  As our case is new, so we must think anew, and act anew.  We must disenthrall ourselves, and then we shall save our country.  Fellow citizens, we cannot escape history.  The fiery trial through which we pass, will light us down, in honor or dishonor, to the latest generation.  We say we are for Union. The world will not forget that we say this.  In giving freedom to the slave, we assure freedom to the free.  Honorable alike, in what we give, and what we preserve.  We shall nobly save, or meanly lose, the last best hope of earth." |  |  |  |
| Elisha  Hunt  Rhodes –  Actor | "December 31.  Well the year 1862 is drawing to a close, and as I look back, I am bewildered, when I think of the hundreds of miles I have tramped, the thousands of dead and wounded that I have seen.  But we hope for the best, and feel sure that in the end, the Union will be restored.  Goodbye, 1862."  Elisha Hunt Rhodes. |  |  |  |
| Frederick Douglass –  Actor | “We shout for joy that we live to record this righteous decree. Free forever!  Oh, ye millions of free and loyal men, who have earnestly sought to free your bleeding country from the dreadful ravages of revolution and anarchy.  Lift up now your voices with joy and thanksgiving, for with freedom to the slave will come peace and safety to your country."  Frederick Douglass. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On December 31st, a large crowd of abolitionists, Including Harriet Tubman and Wendell Phillips, gathered together the music hall in Boston.  At midnight, the emancipation proclamation would take effect.  On the stage, William Lloyd Garrison wept with joy beside Frederick Douglass.  The cheering crowd called for Harriet Beecher Stowe. She stood in the balcony, tears in her eyes.  At a Washington, D.C., contraband camp, former slaves testified.  One remembered the sale of his daughter. “Now no more of that," he said, "they can't sell my wife and children anymore. Bless the lord."  On the Sea Islands off South Carolina, Federal Agents read the proclamation aloud to former slaves, under the spreading boughs of a huge oak tree.  As the commander of a new all-black regiment unfurled an American flag,  his men broke into song.  "It seemed the choked voice of a race at last unloosed," he wrote. |  |  |  |
| Unknown Woman  Singing | “In the beauty of the lilies, Christ was born across the sea,  with a glory in his bosom, that transfigures you and me,  as he died to make men holy, let us die to make men free,  while God is marching on.  Glory, glory hallelujah, glory, glory hallelujah,  glory, glory hallelujah, His truth is marching on” |  |  |  |
| **Chapter / Episode 4 – Simply Murder: 1863** | | | | |
| Sam  Watkins –  Actor | "In this army, one hole in the seat of the britches indicates a captain,  two holes, a lieutenant,  and the seat of the pants all out, indicates that the individual is a private." |  |  | 04:03:28 |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | They both had a particular way of yelling.  The Northern troops made a sort of hurrah. It was called by one soldier, the deep, generous, manly shout of the Northern soldier.  The Confederates, of course, had what was called the rebel yell.  We don't really know what that sounded like.  One Northerner described it, he said, he described it by describing the peculiar corkscrew sensation that goes up your backbone when you hear it.  And he said, "and if you claim you've heard it and weren't scared, that means, you never heard it."  It was... It was basically, I think, a sort of fox hunt yip, mixed up with a sort of banshee squall. And it was used on the attack.  And an old Confederate veteran, after the war, was asked at a UDC meeting in Tennessee somewhere, to give the rebel yell. The ladies had never heard it.  And he said, "it can't be done, except at a run, and I couldn't do it anyhow, with a mouth full of false teeth and a stomach full of food."  So they never got to hear what it sounded like. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Civil War was fought in 10,000 places.  Murfreesboro, Chambersburg, Dranesville, and Opelousas. Apache Canyon, St. Augustine, Paducah, and Brandy Station. On the Red River, the Rappahannock, and the Rapidan. Across the Susquehanna and the Monongahela.  From Mount Ida and Mount Olive to Mount Zion.  From Ninevah and Nickajack Gap to New Berne, New Carthage, New Iberia, New Lisbon, and New Hope.  From the Yazoo Delta to the Chickasaw Bluffs.  By 1863, the Tai Ping rebellion in China had entered its 13th year.  Civil War broke out in Afghanistan.  In America, Eddie Cuthbert of the Philadelphia Keystones, stole the first base in professional baseball.  The National Academy of Science was founded in Washington.  The roller skate was patented.  And Henry Ford and William Randolph Hearst, were born.  In 1863, Confederate General Stonewall Jackson would become a terror to the Union Army and a legend, North and South.  Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain, a college professor from Maine, would lead his regiment to glory on hillsides in Virginia and Pennsylvania.  In the wilderness west of Fredericksburg, Robert E. Lee would devise one of the most daring and brilliant battle plans of the war, while 1,000 miles to the west, Ulysses S. Grant continued to hammer away at the rebel stronghold at Vicksburg.  Confederate Private Sam Watkins would fight at Murfreesboro, Shelbyville,  Chickamauga, Lookout Mountain, and Missionary Ridge, and somehow survive.  While Elisha Hunt Rhodes would have the best 4th of July of his life.  In 1863, despite a Northern victory at Antietam, despite emancipation, despite a clear superiority in men and material, the Union seemed close to fumbling all it had. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Meanwhile, from Vicksburg to Charleston, the fragile Confederate coalition, was coming apart, and yet somehow the Confederacy stayed alive, by the daring and luck and genius of its high command.  But the biggest tests were coming that summer, where the Mississippi took a sharp turn at Vicksburg, and at a sleepy corner of Pennsylvania. |  |  | 04:07:10 |
| Thomas Warwick –  Actor | "Murfreesboro, Tennessee, January 1, 1863.  Martha, I can inform you, that i have seen the monkey show at last, and I don't want to see it no more.  I never want to go on another fight anymore, Sister.  I want to come home worse than I ever did before.”  Thomas Warwick. |  |  |  |
| Charles  Coffin –  Actor | Charles Coffin, Boston Journal.  "All the surrounding forests had disappeared, built into huts with chimneys of sticks and mud, or cut for burning in the stone fireplaces.  The soldiers were discouraged.  They knew that they had fought bravely but that there had been mismanagement and inefficient generalship." |  |  |  |
| Elisha  Hunt  Rhodes –  Actor | "Falmouth, Virginia.  This morning, we found ourselves covered with snow that had fallen during the night.  It is too cold to write, how I would like to have some of those on to Richmond fellows out here with us.”  Elisha Hunt Rhodes." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The men of the army of the Potomac had not been paid for six months, and while army warehouses at Washington bulged with food, little of it got to the winter camp. |  |  |  |
| Thomas F. Pearly –  Actor | "I do not believe I have ever seen greater misery from sickness than now exists in our Army of the Potomac.  Thomas F. Pearly, Inspector General." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | One Wisconsin officer called the winter camp at Falmouth, Virginia, the Union's Valley Forge.  Hundreds died from scurvy, dysentery, typhoid, diphtheria, pneumonia.  There were epidemics of measles, mumps, and other childhood diseases.  And farm boys, crowded with other men for the first time in their lives, were especially susceptible.  Disease was the chief killer of the war, taking two for every one who died of battle wounds. |  |  |  |
| Francis  Jewett  Parker –  Actor | "One of the wonders of these times was the army cough.  It is almost a literal fact that when 100,000 men began to stir at reveille, the sound of their coughing would drown out that of the beating drums." |  |  |  |
| M.N.  Collins,  Actor | "The newspapers say the army is eager for another fight. It is false.  They are heartily sick of battles that produce no results." |  |  |  |
| Edward Hastings Ripley –  Actor | "I don't think I have received half of my letters.  It cannot be possible that one is my quota, in over three weeks from home.  I've written constantly from every place where we have stopped long enough to write and could mail a letter.”  Edward Hastings Ripley. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | 200 men deserted every day.  By late January, one quarter of the Union Army was absent without leave.  Added to the men's misery, were memories of the battle they had fought across the Rappahannock at Fredericksburg in December. |  |  | 04:11:33 |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “At Fredericksburg, there was an exchange across the Rappahannock.  One of them hollered, "Hey, Reb,"  And they said, "Yeah?"  “When are you fellas going to come over?"  They said, "when we get good and ready.”  “What do you want?"  And they said, "Want Fredericksburg."  "Don't you wish, you may get it!"  And things like that.  There were a lot of those exchanges.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | A line of hills overlooked Fredericksburg, Virginia, a key Confederate transportation link, midway between Richmond and Washington.  Union General Ambrose E. Burnside's plan had been to cross the Rappahannock by pontoon, occupy the town, then take the thinly defended heights.  Bold action did not come naturally to Ambrose Burnside, though he had led his men to Fredericksburg determined to display the fighting spirit his predecessor, George McClellan, had so conspicuously lacked.  But now the War Department failed him, and 17 days passed, waiting for pontoon bridges to arrive. By the time the bridge was in place, Lee had 75,000 men waiting in the hills.  Stonewall Jackson was on the right, James Longstreet on the left, along a bluff called Marye's Heights.  From the top of the heights, Lee could just see Chatham Mansion, across the river on the Union side, where 30 years before, he had courted his wife Mary Custis. It was now Burnside's headquarters.  On December 11th, Union guns began shelling Fredericksburg, setting much of the town on fire.  Then the troops started across the river.  Some wondered why the Confederates did not make it harder for them to cross.  "They want to get us in," one private said, "getting out won't be quite so smart and easy."  While waiting to attack the heights, Union men looted what was left of the town.  The great assault came two days later on December 13th.  Federal forces advanced toward Marye's Heights.  Lee could not believe the enemy would be so foolish.  His artillery covered all the approaches. Four lines of riflemen waited behind a stone wall, that ran along the base of the hill.  "General," an officer assured James Longstreet, "a chicken could not live in that field when we open on it." |  |  |  |
| William  Owen –  Actor | "How beautifully they came on. Their bright bayonets glistening in the sunlight made the line look like a huge serpent of blue and steel.  We could see our shells bursting in their ranks, making great gaps, but on they came, as though they would go straight through us, and over us.  Now we gave them canister, and that staggered them, a few more paces onward, and the Georgians in the road below us rose up, and let loose a storm of lead into the faces of the advancing brigade.” |  |  | 04:14:15 |
| George Pickett –  Actor | “The brilliant assault of their Irish brigade was beyond description.  We forgot they were fighting us, and cheer after cheer at their fearlessness went up along our lines.”  General George Pickett |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | It was suicide.  "They came forward," one man said, as though they were breasting a storm of rain and sleet. Faces and bodies half turned to the storm, shoulders shrugged."  The Irish brigade got within 25 paces of the wall.  The men of the 24th Georgia, who shot them down, were Irish, too.  A Union officer watching from a church steeple, saw brigade after brigade charge the stone wall.  "They seemed to melt," he said, “like snow coming down on warm ground." |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | They still believed that to take a position, you massed your men and moved up, and gave them the bayonet.  There were practically no bayonet wounds in the Civil War, much more than there were in the First World War or the Second.  They never came in that kind of contact.  Or at least very seldom came in that kind of contact.  But they still thought that to mass their fire, they had to mass their men.  So they lined up, and marched up toward an entrenched line, and got blown away. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Fourteen assaults were beaten back from Marye's Heights, before Burnside decided it could not be taken.  9,000 men fell before the Confederate guns. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | More credit for valor is given to Confederate soldiers.  They're supposed to have had more élan and dash.  Actually, i know of no braver men in either army, than the Union troops at Fredericksburg, which is a serious defeat.  But to keep charging that wall at the foot of Marye's Heights, after all the failures there have been, and they were all failures, is a singular instance of valor. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Watching from above, even Robert E. Lee was moved.  "It is well," he said, "that war is so terrible. We should grow too fond of it."  Colonel Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain and his 20th Maine, were among the thousands of Union men pinned down at the foot of the heights.  That night, the temperature fell below freezing, and a stiff wind blew.  Men now froze as well as bled to death.  Night brought quiet. |  |  | 04:16:49 |
| Joshua  Lawrence  Chamberlain-  Actor | "But out of that silence, rose new sounds, more appalling still-- strange ventriloquism, of which you could not locate the source.  A smothered moan, as if a thousand discords were flowing together into a keynote--weird, unearthly, terrible to hear and bear, yet startling with its nearness.  The writhing concord broken by cries for help.  Some begging for a drop of water, some calling on God for pity, and some on friendly hands to finish what the enemy had so horribly begun.  Some with delirious, dreamy voices murmuring loved names, as if the dearest were bending over them.  And underneath, all the time, the deep bass note from closed lips, too hopeless or too heroic, to articulate their agony.  At last, outwearied and depressed, I moved two dead men a little and lay down between them, making a pillow of the breast of a third, drew the flap of his overcoat over my face, and tried to sleep.”  Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | They were stuck there all night, and all the next day, crouching behind a wall of their own dead, trying not to hear the Confederate bullets thudding into the corpses of their friends.  Burnside, openly weeping, declared that he himself would lead the new attack.  Subordinates talked him out of it.  That night, Chamberlain, and his men, scraped out shallow graves for the dead.  As they worked, the Northern Lights began to dance In the winter sky. |  |  |  |
| Joshua  Lawrence  Chamberlain-  Actor | "Who would not pass on as they did?  Dead for their country's life, and lighted to burial by the meteor splendors of their native sky." |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | It was very unusual to see the Northern Lights that far south.  But the whole heavens were lit up with streamers of fire, and whatever the Northern Lights are.  And the Confederates took it as a sign, that God Almighty Himself, was celebrating a Confederate victory. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt  Rhodes –  Actor | "The slaughter is terrible, the result, disastrous.  Until we have good generals, it is useless to fight battles." |  |  | 04:19:56 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Union had lost 12,600 men.  The South had lost 5,300 men, but many of them were only missing, gone  home for Christmas.  The battered Union army limped back across the river.  An icy rain began to fall.  From the ruins of Fredericksburg, Confederate soldiers openly taunted the Union troops, huddled miserably, on the far side of the Rappahannock. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “After the battle of Fredericksburg, the Confederates went back into the town.  And They saw all the damage that had been done during the Union occupation of the town. And there was a great deal of damage, real vandalism, and they were shocked.  And someone on Jackson's staff said, "how are we going to put an end to all this kind of thing?"  And Jackson said, "Kill em. Kill em all." |  |  |  |
| Nannie  Haskins-  Actor | "Clarksville.  Those hateful gunboats.  They looked like they were from the lower regions.  Now this is the second night that four of them have been anchored in the river opposite our house.  I see the men crawling about on the boats, like so many black snakes.  Nannie Haskins." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | 1,500 Union men were now stationed at Clarksville, Tennessee.  No one could enter or leave the town without a military pass.  "Every day," Mrs. D. N.. Kennedy wrote her husband in Georgia, "the reigns are tightened."  On Deer Isle, Maine, the parents of Private Harlton Powers, learned that he was among the missing at Fredericksburg. In fact, his fellow soldiers were certain, he was dead, but had been unable to recognize his body among the swollen, blackened Union corpses.  His father placed a stone to his memory anyway, in the little cemetery at southwest harbor.  Private Alfred Robbins, age 20, collapsed and died while on his way to mail a letter in camp near Port Hudson, Louisiana.  The cause was never discovered.  In March, Corporal Farnum Haskell's coffin came home from Louisiana, and was buried at Mount Adams cemetery, despite the great difficulty of digging a grave In the frozen ground. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | During the long, cold, rainy winter of 1863, Confederate forces huddled in defensive positions south of the Duck River, near Tullahoma, Tennessee.  Confederate officers liked to explain that Tullahoma, came from the Greek word Tulla, meaning mud, and Homa, meaning, more mud.  The Confederacy was on the move.  Confederate General John C. Pemberton, beat back Union forces trying to take the Chickasaw Bluffs, north of Vicksburg.  John Morgan's Confederate cavalry, raided Kentucky, burning bridges, twisting train tracks, and taking 2,000 Union prisoners.  And Nathan Bedford Forrest, was driving the Union Army mad, everywhere he went. Stealing horses, harrying supply lines, attacking armies four times the strength of his, then disappearing without a trace.  In two weeks, Forrest stole 10,000 rifles, wrecked $3 million worth of equipment, and cut U.S. Grant's life lines, and forced him to retreat.  In Texas, General John B. Magruder captured a Union flotilla at Galveston.  After the bombardment was over, Confederate Major A.M. Lee went aboard the badly hit U.S.S. Harriet lane.  There he found his son, a federal lieutenant, dying on the deck. |  |  | 04:22:48 |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes –  Actor | "January 24, near Falmouth.  Daylight showed a strange scene.  Men, horses, artillery, pontoons, and wagons, were stuck in the mud.  Rebels put up a sign marked, "Burnside stuck in the mud.”  We can fight Rebels, but not in the mud.  Elisha Hunt Rhodes." |  |  |  |
| Thomas  Chamberlain-  Actor | "I wish you could hear Joshua give off a command and see him ride along the battalion on his white horse.  He looked so splendid.  He told me last night, that he never felt so well in his life.”  Tom Chamberlain. |  |  |  |
| Thomas  Chamberlain-  Actor | "What makes it strange is that I should have gained 12 pounds living on worms.” |  |  |  |
| Unknown Union Soldier-  Actor | “We live so mean here that hard bread is all worms, and the meat stinks like hell, and rice two or three times a week, and worms as long as your finger.  I liked rice once, but God damn the stuff now." |  |  |  |
| John Davis  Billings –  Actor | "It was no uncommon occurrence for a man to find the surface of his pot of coffee swimming with weevils, after breaking up hardtack in it.  But they were easily skimmed off and left no distinctive flavor behind." |  |  |  |
| Benjamin Franklin Jackson –  Actor | "Tell Ma that I think of her beans and collards often and wish for some, but wishing does no good.”  Benjamin Franklin Jackson. |  |  | 04:25:10 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Union troops were issued beans, bacon, pickled beef, called salt horse by the men, desiccated, compressed mixed vegetables, and hardtack, square flour and water biscuits, hard enough, some said, they could stop bullets. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | In the Southern army, you ate something called Sloosh.  You got issued cornmeal and bacon.  And you fried the bacon, which left a great deal of grease in the pan.  Then you took the cornmeal, and swirled it around in the grease, to make the dough.  Then you might take the dough and make a snake of it and put it around your ramrod and cook it over the campfire.  That was called Sloosh.  They ate a lot of that. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Coffee was the preferred drink of both armies.  Union troops crushed the beans with their rifle butts, drank four pints of it a day, strong enough, one man said, to float an iron wedge.  And When they could not build a fire, they were content to chew the grounds.  Southerners made do with substitutes, brewed from peanuts, potatoes, and chicory. |  |  |  |
| Calvin B.  Crandell -  Actor | "We have been living on the contents of those boxes you sent to us.  Nothing was spoiled except that card of biscuits. Those were molded some, but we used over half of them in a soup.  Thank Mr. Berdicts a thousand times for me, also Mrs. Maxson, for those pies, and those fried cakes and gingersnaps were first-rate, and the dried berries, they're nice, and the dried beef and apple sauce, that was first-rate." |  |  |  |
| George  McClellan –  Actor | "No one agent so much obstructs this army as the degrading vice of drunkenness.  Total abstinence would be worth 50,000 men to the armies of the United States.”  General George McClellan. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | If a soldier couldn't buy it, he made it.  One Union recipe called for bark juice, tar water, turpentine, brown sugar,  lamp oil, and alcohol.  Southerners sometimes dropped in raw meat, and let the mixture ferment for a month or so, to add what one veteran remembered as "an old and mellow taste."  The men called their home brew "Nockum stiff," "pop skull," and "Oh! Be Joyful." |  |  |  |
| Charles Moore –  Actor | "I invited my companions to assist me in emptying three canteens of Oh! be Joyful, then spent the balance of the evening singing. Then we parted in good spirits." |  |  | 04:28:43 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In March 1863, John Mosby's Confederate Rangers raided Fairfax Courthouse, Virginia, capturing two captains, 30 privates, 58 horses, and Brigadier General Edwin Stoughton.  "For that i am sorry," Lincoln said, when told of the capture, "for I can make Brigadier Generals, but I can't make horses."  General Mosby had made life miserable for Northern commanders throughout the war.  No other Confederate officer was mentioned favorably as many times in Robert E. Lee's dispatches, as John Singleton Mosby. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | There were no medals in the Confederate army  Not one in the whole course of the war.  The Confederate reason for that given was that they were all heroes, and it would not do to single anyone out.  They were not all heroes, but there was a suggestion, made to Lee that there be a roll of honor for the army of Northern Virginia. And Lee disallowed it.  The highest honor you could get in the Confederate army, was to be mentioned in dispatches.  That was considered absolutely enough. |  |  |  |
| Frederick  Douglass –  Actor | "March 5, 1863.  The arm of the slaves is the best defense against the arm of the slave holder. Who would be free themselves must strike the blow. I urge you to fly to arms and smite with death the power that would bury the government and your liberty in the same hopeless grave. This is our golden opportunity.  Frederick Douglass. |  |  |  |
| Abraham  Lincoln –  Actor | “The colored population is the great available, and yet unavailed of, force for restoring the Union.  The bare sight of 50,000 armed and drilled black soldiers, upon the banks of the Mississippi, would end the rebellion at once. And who doubts that we can present that sight, if we but take hold in earnest.”  Abraham Lincoln. |  |  |  |
| Barbara  Fields –  Historian | The people most affected by the emancipation proclamation, obviously did not receive it as news. Because they knew, before Lincoln knew, that the war was about emancipation.  And moreover, they knew, as perhaps Lincoln did without fully realizing it, and certainly as many people today do not realize, that the emancipation proclamation did nothing to get them their freedom.  It said that they had a right, to go and put their bodies on the line, if they had the nerve to believe in it. And many of them had the nerve to believe in it, and many suffered for that. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | To Lincoln, it was now clear that harsher measures were needed to destroy the Confederacy.  He called for more troops, and in February, pushed a Conscription Act through Congress. The emancipation proclamation had already authorized the arming of freed slaves. |  |  | 04:31:55 |
| Richard  Dans –  Actor | "As to the politics of Washington, the most striking thing is the absence of personal loyalty to the president. It does not exist. He has no admirers, no enthusiastic supporters. No one to bet on his head." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The fall elections had not gone well.  Fredericksburg only made matters worse.  And in Washington, talk of the disaster was everywhere.  "If there is a worse place than hell," Lincoln told a visitor, "I'm in it." |  |  |  |
| Stephen B.  Oates –  Historian | The single most unpopular act of Lincoln's administration was the emancipation proclamation.  It not only was horribly unpopular in the Confederacy, where Jefferson Davis called it the most wicked thing that the dark side of humankind had ever came up with, but millions of Northerners responded to it as well.  They did not really want, a great many Northerners did not want the war to be changed to a war over slave liberation. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Opposition to the war was spreading, especially among Democrats in the heartland. Michigan, Ohio, Iowa, Indiana, and the southern half of Lincoln's own Illinois.  The proclamation ignited an antiwar movement in the North.  All but 35 men of the 138th Illinois deserted over emancipation, declaring they would lie in the woods until moss grew on their backs, rather than help free the slaves.  Groups with names like the Knights of the Golden Circle, and Sons of Liberty, met in secret, and muttered of forcing an end to the war. Their enemies called them Copperheads, and they wore on their lapels, the head of liberty, snipped from a copper penny.  Their leader was Congressman Clement Vallandigham of Ohio.  Lincoln had him thrown in jail, and later banished to the Confederacy. |  |  |  |
| Clement Vallandigham  Actor - | "You have not conquered the South. You never will. War for the Union was abandoned. War for the negro openly begun, and with stronger battalions than before. With what success? Let the dead at Fredericksburg answer." |  |  |  |
| James W.  Symington -  Former Member of Congress / Historian | All of these things bore in on him, plus the fact that the South had a strong army and a good leadership.  But then he would pick up a Richmond newspaper, and he'd say, "here's what they're saying about Jeff Davis...down there.  You know, I don't look so bad."  Because the South had a free press, too.  And he realized, you know, that Jeff was not doing any better than he was as far as they were concerned. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “Davis was walking down the street in Richmond one day, and a Confederate soldier, who was in Richmond on furlough, passed him, and stopped him and said,  "Sir, Mister, be in’t you Jefferson Davis?"  And Davis said that he was.  The soldier then said, "Well, I thought so, you look so much like a Confederate postage stamp." |  |  | 04:34:44 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Jefferson Davis was trying to win a war while forging a nation out of 11 states, suspicious of even the most trivial move toward centralized government.  When Davis called for a day of national fasting, the Governor of Georgia ignored it, then named a different fast day of his own. |  |  |  |
| Joseph  Brown –  Actor | "I entered into this revolution to contribute my might to sustain the rights of states, and to prevent consolidation of the government.  And i am still a rebel, no matter who may be in power.”  Governor Joseph Brown of Georgia. |  |  |  |
| Mary  Chesnut –  Actor | "The Confederacy has been done to death by politicians.”  Mary Chesnut." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | "Pardon me," a South Carolinian wrote his Congressman, is the majority always drunk?"  Vice President Alexander Stephens, believed Davis weak and vacillating, timid, petulant, peevish, obstinate. Stephens left Richmond in 1862, rarely to return.  "I make no terms," Davis once said, "I accept no compromise."  He refused to unbend in public, or to curry favor with the press.  Privately, he commuted nearly every death sentence for desertion that reached his desk, explaining that the poorest use of a soldier, was to shoot him. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | He's often described as a bloodless pedant.  A man who filled all his time with small time paperwork, and never anything else.  An icy-cold man who had no friendliness in him.  I found the opposite to be true, in all those respects.  Davis was an outgoing, friendly man,  A great family man, loved his wife and children.  An infinite store of compassion.  Lee said it best. He said, "I don't think anyone could name anyone, who could have done a better job than Davis did, and I personally don't know of anyone who could have done as good a job."  That's from Robert E. Lee. Which is pretty good authority. |  |  |  |
| Stephen B.  Oates –  Historian | Davis may well have been the only Southerner who understood Southern nationality.  Who understood what sacrifices had to be made, if the Confederacy was ever going to gel as a nation.  He kept saying, "i need the kind of powers that Lincoln got.  I need the kind of resources that he got in the draft laws. I need to be able to suspend the writ of habeas corpus like he did."  He would have said, "we can't live by the dogmas of the quiet past any longer."  He didn't say that, but he acted that out.  He said, "I have to be given the kinds, this Confederate government, needs the kind of national authority, national power that the Union had, in order to win."  And they didn't get it  Because states' rights helped kill the Confederacy. |  |  | 04:37:25 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | A single cake of soap now cost $1.10, a tenth of a soldier's monthly pay.  At the beginning of 1863, a barrel of flour cost $70 in the South. By year's end, it cost $250.  The Confederate treasury cranked out millions of dollars in notes unbacked by gold.  Southern printing was so primitive, that counterfeiters were sometimes caught because their work was too good. |  |  |  |
| Stephen B.  Oates –  Historian | By 1862 and 1863, the south suffered from terrible inflationary currency.  What was really at a premium was a Union gold dollar.  So that the Confederate people could never get away from the Union, not even economically. |  |  |  |
| George W.  Adaire –Editor, Actor | "If the Confederacy is defeated, it will be by the people at home.”  Atlanta Southern Confederacy. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Thousands of women, infuriated by soaring prices, stormed through downtown Richmond shops, smashing windows and gathering up armfuls of food and clothing.  Troops tried to stop them, and Jefferson Davis himself came out, throwing what money he had in his pockets to the crowd, and begging them to blame the Yankees, not the government.  Then he warned the troops would open fire if they did not disperse.  The women straggled home. |  |  |  |
| Louis  Wigfall –  Actor | "Patriotic planters would willingly put their own flesh and blood into the army, but when they were asked for a negro, it was like drawing an eyetooth.”  Senator Louis T. Wigfall, Texas |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Farmers were called upon to contribute 1/10 of their produce, and the Confederate army was empowered to impress male slaves as laborers, provided a monthly fee was paid to their masters.  Planters moved their slaves inland, away from the government and the fighting.  150,000 slaves were marched all the way to Texas. Hundreds, perhaps thousands, died along the way. |  |  | 04:39:45 |
| Benjamin Franklin Jackson –  Actor | "Wartrace, Tennessee, June 10, 1863.  I have just heard from Hilliard's legion.  They're deserting every day. They say they don't get enough to eat.  I have just bought me a testament. i gave $2.00 for it. Everything's high here.”  Benjamin Franklin Jackson. |  |  |  |
| Thomas Warwick –  Actor | "I saw a sight today that made me feel mighty bad. I saw a man shot for deserting. There was 24 guns at him, and they shot him all to pieces. He went home, and they brought him back, and then he went home again, so they shot him for that. Martha, it was one sight that I did hate to see." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | By the end of the year, 2/5 of the southern army would be absent, with or without leave. Deserters sometimes banded together, often fed and clothed by Union sympathizers.  In North Carolina, the Pro-Union “Heroes of America”, had over 10,000 members. By the end of the war, Unionists from every Confederate state except South Carolina, had sent regiments to the North.  In Jones County, Mississippi, a guerrilla band ran off tax collectors, burned bridges, and ambushed Confederate columns for three years.  Reporters called the region the “Kingdom of Jones.” |  |  |  |
| John  Pullen –  Actor | "How i wish you could hear the music of this encampment tonight.  Just stand out in the open air a little while and listen.  All seems happy, and all seems gay, but still, could you look into their hearts, you would see thoughts of the loved ones, that they've left at home,  rise above their mirth and gaiety.  Yet they are contented, though not happy.  Contented to do their duty, contented to bear their part in this war, and sing sad thoughts away. |  |  |  |
| John Partridge –  Actor | “Dear Fanny,  I don't know what we should have done without our band.  It's acknowledged by everyone to be the best in the division.  Every night about sundown, Gilmore gives us a splendid concert, playing selections from the operas, some very pretty marches, quicksteps, waltzes, and the like." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Troops sang in camp and on the way to battle.  Confederates favored Dixie and the Bonnie Blue Flag. Union soldiers still preferred an old Methodist tune.  Mostly they liked sentimental songs, Just Before The Battle Mother, The Vacant Chair, All’s Quiet Along The Potomac, and Home Sweet Home.  In many camps, the men were forbidden to play a song called “Weeping, Sad and Lonely”, officers considering it destructive of morale.  Both sides loved Lorena. |  |  | 04:42:59 |
| Elisha  Hunt  Rhodes –  Actor | "April 14, 1863,  Rappahannock River, Virginia, near Franklin's Crossing.  General Thomas J. Jackson came down to the river bank today with a party of ladies and officers.  We raised our hats to the party, and strange to say, the ladies waved their handkerchiefs in reply. General Jackson took his field glasses and coolly surveyed our party.  We could have shot him with a revolver, but we have an agreement that neither side will fire, as it does no good, and in fact, is simply murder.”  Elisha Hunt Rhodes. |  |  |  |
| Abraham  Lincoln –  Actor | "General, I have placed you at the head of the army of the Potomac.  I've heard in such a way as to believe it, of your recently saying that both the army and the government needed a dictator.  Of course, it was not for this, but in spite of this, that I've given you command.  Only those generals who gain successes can set up as dictators. What I now ask of you, is military success, and I will risk the dictatorship.”.  Abraham Lincoln. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Again Lincoln turned to a new general.  He replaced Burnside with Joseph Hooker. A tenacious west pointer called Fighting Joe, who drank and talked too much for his own good.  It was absolutely necessary, Lincoln told him, to destroy Lee's army. |  |  |  |
| Joseph Hooker –  Actor | "My plans are perfect. May God have mercy on General Lee, for I will have none." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Hooker's plans called for one part of his enormous army to feign an assault on Lee's front, still at Fredericksburg, while the rest marched up the Rappahannock, crossed the river, and attacked Lee from the rear.  On April 30th, Hooker's main force, 70,000 strong, reached Chancellorsville. A lone house, in a clearing surrounded by a thick forest, called the Wilderness.  Hooker and his officers moved in downstairs and continued to map out the assault they were sure would trap Lee. |  |  |  |
| Joseph Hooker –  Actor | "The enemy must either ingloriously fly, or come out from behind his defenses and give us battle upon our own ground, where certain destruction awaits him." |  |  | 04:47:26 |
| Abraham Lincoln –  Actor | "The hen is the wisest of all the animal creation, because she never cackles, until after the egg is laid." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | But Robert E. Lee, outnumbered nearly two to one, was not fooled by Hooker's plan.  Defying all military convention, he divided his own much smaller force, leaving only one quarter of his men at Fredericksburg, before rushing west to shore up his flank.  When Lee's Confederates reached the edge of the Wilderness, Union troops moved out to engage them.  But the fighting had hardly begun when fighting Joe Hooker inexplicably ordered his forces back to defensive positions around the Chancellor house.  "To tell the truth," he later tried to explain, "i just lost confidence in Joe Hooker."  Lee sensed Hooker's confusion, and the next day divided his army a second time, sending 28,000 men under Stonewall Jackson, on an extraordinary 14-mile march through the dense Wilderness and around the Union's right flank.  Hooker somehow persuaded himself that Jackson was actually retreating, and despite the skeletal rebel force remaining in front of him, chose to stay in camp.  All day long came reports from terrified Union pickets, of a huge Rebel force, moving just beyond the screen of trees to the west.  They were ignored.  Late that afternoon, Union troops were boiling coffee and playing cards, when deer came bounding out of the forest and through their camp.  Jackson's army was right behind them.  "It was a perfect whirlwind of men," a survivor said. "the enemy seemed to come from every direction."  The Federals fell back nearly two miles, before darkness stopped the Confederate sweep. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | Chancellorsville, in many ways, is Lee’s Masterpiece.  It's where the odds were longest.  It's where he took the greatest risk, in dividing his army in the presence of a superior enemy.  And kept the pressure on.  The real fault at Chancellorsville, was the attack was staged so late in the day, that they were not able to push it, to the extent that Jackson had intended to.  And he was even attempting to make a night attack, a very rare thing in the Civil War, because he knew that he hadn't finished up what he had started to begin. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Eager to fight on, Jackson rode out between the lines that evening to scout for a night attack.  When he turned back toward his men, nervous Confederate pickets opened fire. Two of his aides fell dead. Jackson was hit twice in the left arm.  His shattered arm was amputated the next morning.  Lee was horrified. "He has lost his left arm," he said, "but i have lost my right."  Hooker continued to bumble.  As he nervously watched the fighting from the porch of the Chancellor house, a shell split the pillar he was leaning against, and knocked him senseless.  Groggy all day, he refused to relinquish command. Finally, he ordered retreat. The defeat was total.  Again the Union army withdrew across the Rappahannock.  Hooker had lost 17,000 men. Even more than at Fredericksburg.  "My God, My God," said Lincoln when he got the news, "what will the country say?"  Chancellorsville was Lee's most brilliant victory. And one of the costliest.  13,000 of his men were dead or out of action, but it was the loss of one man that concerned him most.  Stonewall Jackson seemed to be recuperating, then on Sunday, May 10th,  he took a turn for the worse. |  |  | 04:51:04 |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “The scene is in a bedroom, in which he's coming in and out of consciousness. Pneumonia's what he died of, not the loss of his arm.  And his wife got there to be with him. And the surgeon, Dr. McGuire, told Mrs. Jackson that her husband would die that day.  And she told him, said, "the doctor says that you won't last the day out,"  And he said, "oh, no, my child. It's not that serious." And then finally, she said, "you'll be with the lord this day,"  And he went off into some sort of sleepy delirium. Pneumonia affects people in strange ways.  He called the doctor over and says, "Dr. McGuire, my wife tells me I'm gonna die today. Is that true?" And the doctor said, "yes, it is."  He said, "Good, very good. I always wanted to die on a Sunday."  And when they offered him brandy or morphine, he said, "no. I want to keep my mind clear,"  And the last thing he said--it sort of--he wandered in his mind. He was calling on A.P. Hill, "prepare for action."  And then all of a sudden, he was quiet, very quiet for a spell, and he said in a clear, distinct voice, "let us cross over the river and rest under the shade of the trees," And then died. |  |  |  |
| Mary  Chesnut –  Actor | "The death of our pious, brave, and noble General, Stonewall Jackson is a great blow to our cause." |  |  | 04:54:35 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Winfield Scott. Henry Halleck. Irvin McDowell. George McClellan. John Pope. George McClellan again. Ambrose Burnside. Joseph Hooker.  Lincoln could not find the general he needed.  He now knew that to win the war, the southern armies had to be crushed.  He had the men, but he needed a general with the will to use them. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln –  Actor | "No general yet found can face the arithmetic.  But the end of the war will be at hand when he shall be discovered.  Vicksburg is the key. The war can never be brought to a close until the key is in our pocket." |  |  |  |
| Ulysses S.  Grant –  Actor | "A long line of high, rugged, irregular bluffs, clearly cut against the sky, crowned with cannon, which peered ominously from embrasures to the right and left, as far as the eye could see.  That is Vicksburg." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | For 2 1/2 months, Ulysses S. Grant doggedly attempted to dig or hack or float his army through the tangled bayous and seize the town of Vicksburg. Nothing worked.  The press accused him of sloth and stupidity. Hinted he was drinking again.  Finally, Grant decided on a daring plan. He would march down river through the swamps on the western side, cross below Vicksburg, and without hope of resupply or reinforcement, come up from behind and attack the city.  By early May, Grant had crossed the river. |  |  |  |
| Ulysses S.  Grant –  Actor | "When this was effected, I felt a degree of relief scarcely ever equaled since. I was now in the enemy's country, with a river and the stronghold of Vicksburg between me and my base of supply. But I was on dry ground, on the same side of the river with the enemy." |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | The men knew they were cut loose from their base, knew they were going to be dependent for supplies, on a very tenuous supply line,  But Grant himself gave them confidence.  They believed Grant knew what he was doing.  And one great encouragement for their believing that, was quite often on the march, whether at night or in the daytime, they'd be moving along a road or over a bridge, and right beside the road would be Grant on his horse.  A dust-covered man on a dust-covered horse.  Saying "move on, close up."  So they felt very much that he personally was in charge of their movement.  And it gave them the added confidence. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In three weeks, Grant's army, cut off from all communication with the outside world, marched 180 miles, fought and won five battles, at Port Gibson, Raymond, Jackson, Champion's Hill, and Big Black River.  And finally surrounded Vicksburg itself, trapping 31,000 confederates.  On May 19th, Grant tried to take the town by direct assault, but was beaten back. |  |  | 04:58:13 |
| William  Lovelace –  Actor | "May 19th.  Thanks be to the great ruler of the universe, Vicksburg is still safe. The first great assault has been most successfully repelled. All my fears in reference to taking the place by storm, now vanished.”  Reverend William Lovelace Foster,  Chaplain, 35th Missssippi Volunteers. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Grant settled in for a siege, resolved, he said, to "outcamp the enemy." |  |  |  |
| Unknown Vicksburg Woman –  Actor | "It is such folly for them to waste their ammunition like that.  How can they ever take a town that has such advantages for defense and protection as this? We'll just burrow into these hills and let them batter away as hard as they please." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | On May 15th, Jefferson Davis, summoned General Lee to Richmond.  Something had to be done about Grant.  Davis wanted to send part of Lee's army to relieve Vicksburg.  Lee was against it. He had a bolder plan.  The Army of Northern Virginia should invade the North again, striking this time into Pennsylvania. Lee would attack Harrisburg and Philadelphia, and force Grant North to defend Washington. With luck, Washington itself might fall.  It might even force Lincoln to sue for peace, and recognize the Confederacy.  Davis agreed.  Everything now hung on Vicksburg in the west, and Pennsylvania in the east. As Grant pressed his siege at Vicksburg, Lee moved north. |  |  |  |
| **Chapter / Episode 5 – Universe of Battle: 1863** | | | | |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | There's a photograph I'm very fond of. It shows three Confederate soldiers, who were captured at Gettysburg, and they have posed in front of or alongside a snake-rail fence.  And you see exactly how the Confederate soldier was dressed.  You see something in his attitude toward the camera, that's revealing of his nature.  And one of them has his arms like this, as if he's having his picture made, but he's determined to be the individual he is.  And there's something about that picture, that draws me strongly as an image of the war. |  |  | 05:05:15 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | More than once during the Civil War, newspapers reported a strange phenomenon.  From only a few miles away, a battle sometimes made no sound, despite the flash and smoke of cannon, and the fact that more-distant observers could hear it clearly. These eerie silences were called acoustic shadows.  In the summer of 1863, a Union Warship hunting a Confederate Commerce Raider, off Yokohama, attacked a Japanese fleet for harassing the colony of westerners there. The United States won its first naval battle against the Empire of Japan, but the Confederates got away.  In Paris that year, new paintings by Cezanne, Whistler, and Monet were shown at a special exhibit for outcasts. In Russia, Dostoyevsky finished Notes from the Underground, and in London, Karl Marx labored to complete his masterpiece, Das Kapital.  For the first six months of 1863, Robert E. Lee and Stonewall Jackson, had carried out one of the most extraordinary military campaigns in history. Smashing huge Federal armies at Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, and winning the undying love of the South.  But by late May, Confederate luck had changed.  Jackson was dead.  A thousand miles to the west, Ulysses S. Grant's siege of the rebel stronghold at Vicksburg, had gone on so long, that Grant himself, had taken to the bottle, out of boredom.  As June began, the Confederates inside the town, somehow managed to hold on.  Now, to draw Federal troops away from Vicksburg, Lee led his army onto Northern soil again, looking for the right moment to attack.  When it came, on the morning of July 1, 1863, it would be in the most ordinary of places.  For three days, 150,000 men would make war on each other, in the gentle farmland of south Pennsylvania.  When the third day was over, it would prove to have been the most crucial day of the entire war.  In the South, the war had ruined the economy, and yet the Southern fighting spirit was stronger than ever before. In the North, where industry was booming, angry working men would soon take to the streets in protest, against emancipation and the war.  At the end of the year, Abraham Lincoln would travel to the now-quiet fields at Gettysburg, and struggle to put into words, what was happening to his people. |  |  | 05:06:03 |
| Barbara  Fields –  Historian | When a black soldier in New Orleans said, "Liberty must take the day, nothing shorter," he said, in effect, that when we count up those who have died, when we survey the carnage, it must be for something higher than Union and free navigation of the Mississippi river.  During the summer of 1863, a convention of free black people, demanded the right for black men to take part in the struggle as soldiers, and their key resolution said, "It is time now for more effective remedies to be thoroughly tried, in the shape of warm lead and cold steel, duly administered by 100,000 black doctors." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Early in the war, a fugitive slave named Alex Turner, had made his way North and joined the 1st New Jersey cavalry.  In the spring of 1863, he guided his regiment back to his old plantation at Port Royal, Virginia, and killed his former overseer.  When the war was over, he went to New England, and found work as a logger.  In 1883, his daughter Daisy was born. |  |  | 05:10:30 |
| Daisy  Turner –  Daughter of Civil War Soldier | "Dear Madam,  I am a soldier, and my speech is rough and plain,  I'm not much used to writing, and I hate to give you pain,  but i promised I would do it, and he thought it might be so,  if it came from one that loved him, perhaps it would ease the blow.  By this time, you must surely guess, the truth I feign would hide,  and you pardon me for rough soldier words,  while I tell you how he died." |  |  |  |
| William  Christian –  Actor | "This army has never done such fighting as it will do now. We must conquer a peace. We will show the Yankees this time how we can fight."  Private William Christian. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Late in May, Lee's army marched toward Pennsylvania.  Union troops, sent to see what they were up to, completely surprised Jeb Stuart and his Confederate Cavalry at Brandy Station, Virginia.  21,000 mounted men clashed along the Rappahannock, for 12 hours. It was the biggest Cavalry engagement in American history, and it was a stand-off.  But the North had learned the Confederates were on the move.  The flamboyant Stuart, embarrassed at having been caught off guard, and determined to redeem himself, now took off on another daring ride around the Union army, with strict orders to stay in close touch with Lee.  Lee's 70,000 men were divided into three corps.  The first was commanded by James Longstreet, "Old Pete," whom Lee called "My Warhorse."  The second corps, Stonewall Jackson's old command, was under Richard "Baldy" Ewell, who had lost a leg at second Manassas.  The third, was led by A.P. Hill, a new Corps Commander from Virginia, who had helped stave off disaster at Sharpsburg in 1862.  On June 16th, Lee's advance column crossed the Potomac into Maryland.  An even larger Union army followed, careful to keep between the Confederates and Washington.  The new Union Commander was George Meade. Blunt and bookish, he was referred to by subordinates as "a damned, old, goggle-eyed, snapping turtle."  If the Union generals were not sure where Lee was going, Lee had no idea where the Union army even was. Jeb Stuart's Cavalry had ridden too far from the advancing army to keep him informed. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “The Confederates marched through Maryland on into Pennsylvania.  And it's very handsome country there. The barns are magnificent, and the green fields and everything, And the people watching these Confederates go by.  And there was a black body servant, in the column, and they stopped, just to halt.  The people in the house asked him what he thought of this country around here.  And he said, "this is a beautiful country, but it doesn't come up to home in my eyes." |  |  | 05:14:16 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Panic spread throughout the countryside.  Lee's men seized livestock, food, wagons, and clothing from civilians, giving them worthless Confederate scrip in exchange.  They also seized free blacks, and sent them south into slavery.  "My friends," a Southern officer asked the frightened inhabitants of one Pennsylvania town, "how do you like this way of our coming back into the Union?" |  |  |  |
| Daisy  Turner –  Daughter of Civil War Soldier | "It was in the ‘morrow's battle, fast rained the shot and shell,  I was standing close beside him, and I saw him when he fell,  So I took him in my arms, and laid him on the grass,  It was going against orders, but they think they’ll let it pass.  T’was a Minie ball that struck him, it entered at his side,  But we didn't think it fatal, till this morning, when he died." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The greatest battle ever fought in the western hemisphere began as a clash over shoes.  At dawn, on July 1st, a Confederate infantry officer led his men toward the little crossroads town of Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, within view of a Lutheran Seminary, whose high cupola, offered a fine prospect of the surrounding farms and rolling hills.  There was rumored to be a supply of shoes at Gettysburg, and the footsore rebels were there to commandeer them.  The South came in from the North that day, and the North came in from the South.  On the outskirts of town, the Confederates ran headlong into General John Buford's Union Cavalry.  While both sides sent couriers pounding off for reinforcements, Buford tried desperately to hold his ground.  But the Confederates finally overwhelmed him, and pushed the Union forces back toward town. |  |  |  |
| Sallie  Broadhead –  Actor | "People were running here and there, screaming that the town would be shelled. No one knew where to go or what to do.  My husband went to the garden and picked a mess of beans, for he declared the rebels should not have one."  Sallie Broadhead. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Every Confederate and Union division in the area now converged on Gettysburg, Pennsylvania.  By mid-afternoon, Confederate troops occupied Gettysburg, and Union forces had been driven back south of the town.  There, Major General Winfield Scott Hancock, managed to rally the fleeing troops into defensive positions, on Culp's Hill and Cemetery Ridge.  A sign near the cemetery's gateway read, "all persons found using firearms in these grounds will be prosecuted with the utmost rigor of the law."  During the battle, the artist Alfred Waud sketched the action, sending his drawings back to New York for engraving.  Meanwhile, Sam Wilkeson of the New York Times filed dispatches, sitting next to the fresh grave of his son.  Lee arrived in the middle of the afternoon, set up headquarters, and urged Ewell to renew the attack before nightfall.  Ewell chose not to. His men needed rest.  By the end of the day, the Union army held the high ground.  Rather than attack it headlong, Confederate General Longstreet wanted to swing around the Union position, and take a stand between Meade's army and Washington, then let the Union attack.  Without knowing the enemy's strength, Lee overruled Longstreet.  "No," said Lee, "I'm going to whip them here, or they are going to whip me." |  |  | 05:17:30 |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “He had always counted on Stuart and his cavalry for intelligence, as to enemy positions and movements, and he was lacking that.  He was groping around the landscape blind, and people would come up to him in the field all through those days, and he said  "Can you tell me where Stuart is? Have you seen my cavalry?"  A very strange thing for a commander to have to ask.  So when Stuart arrived, all he had to show for all this, was a couple of hundred wagons and mules, and everything else.  And he saw Lee standing there, sternly, looking at him arriving late,  And he blew the thing, by making his announcement at the start.  He said, "General, I brought you 200 brand-new wagons."  And Lee said, "General, they're an impediment to me now. I asked you to help me whip these people."  And it was a, severe admonishment from Lee.  And Lee saw he'd hurt his feelings, so he said, "come. it'll be all right." |  |  |  |
| Sallie  Broadhead –  Actor | "I cannot sleep. I know not what the ‘morrow will bring forth. I think little has been gained so far. Has our army been sufficiently reinforced?"  Sallie Broadhead. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Compared to what was coming, the day had been a skirmish. |  |  | 05:20:54 |
| Thomas  Batchelor –  Actor | "My Dear Son Albert,  I received your affectionate letter yesterday, and I assure you, my dear son, it gives me great relief of mind, to hear that you and your dear brothers were still in the land of the living.  I had not heard one word from you since Barlow Rogers returned home.  May God Bless you, my dear Albert.  Your devoted father, Thomas Batchelor." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Through the night, the two armies continued to gather.  After a 35-mile, all-night march, Union General John Sedgwick arrived with his 6th corps.  By morning, 65,000 Confederates faced 85,000 Federal troops, commanded by General George Meade.  Hills overlooked the Federal positions at either end.  To the north, on the Union right, Culp's hill and Cemetery hill. To the south, the Big and Little Round Tops.  Lee wanted them taken. Meade was no less determined to hold his ground. |  |  |  |
| George  Meade –  Actor | "All commanders are authorized to order the instant death of any soldier who fails in his duty at this hour." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | It took Longstreet all morning, and most of the afternoon, to shift two divisions into position for the assault on the Round Tops.  Assigned to hold the Union position, was General Dan Sickles. A turbulent, ex-Tammany Hall politician, best known before the war, for having shot and killed his wife's lover.  Now Sickles disobeyed orders, and marched his men further out from Little Round Top, to the Devil's Den, the Wheat Field, and into the Peach Orchard beyond.  He was half a mile in front of the Union line, on a flat, exposed position, that left the Round Tops completely undefended. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “The rest of the army was amazed. Someone said he stuck out like a sore thumb.  And I think it was Hancock who saw him go out, and he said, "Wait awhile. you'll see him tumbling back."  And, of course, he did.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Confederates finally attacked at 4:00 in the afternoon.  As they swept forward, the 15th Alabama regiment scrambled up Big Round Top. From there, well above the fighting, Colonel William C. Oates saw his chance.  Little Round Top was completely undefended. From that position, Oates said, he could blow the whole Union army apart. |  |  |  |
| William C. Oates –  Actor | "Within half an hour, I could convert Little Round Top into a Gibraltar that I could hold against ten times the number of men that I had." |  |  | 05:23:53 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | Meanwhile, Meade dispatched General G. K. Warren to the summit.  He immediately saw the danger. Only a handful of signal men held the hill.  Oates' Confederates were moving down and around the Union left.  Warren sent at once for reinforcements. Four union regiments raced up Little Round Top. |  |  |  |
| Joshua  Lawrence  Chamberlain Actor- | "In a moment, all was excitement.  Every soldier seemed to understand the situation, and to be inspired by its danger.  Away we went, under the terrible artillery fire.  Shells were exploding on every side, but our men appeared to be as cool and deliberate in their movements, as if they had been forming a line upon the parade ground in camp.  Up the steep hillside we ran, and reached the crest." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | At the extreme left of the Union line, now was Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain's 20th Maine.  Oates' Alabamians were already moving between the two hills.  Chamberlain's orders were to "hold that ground at all costs." |  |  |  |
| Joshua  Lawrence  Chamberlain Actor- | "Imagine, if you can, nine small companies of infantry, numbering perhaps 300 men, in the form of a right angle, on the extreme flank of an army of 80,000 men, put there to hold the key of the entire position, against a force at least 10 times their number.  Stand firm, you boys from Maine, for not once in a century, are men permitted to bear such responsibilities for freedom and justice, for God and humanity, as are now placed upon you." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | 360 Maine men now took cover behind boulders.  They had less than 10 minutes to spare.  At the last possible moment, Chamberlain sent his Company B, across the hollow between the hills, to bolster his left flank.  Before they were in place, Oates' Confederates charged up the slope.  Chamberlain assumed Company B had been wiped out. He could not afford the loss.  The Maine men opened fire into the charging rebels.  Oates' men staggered but regrouped, and came at them again. |  |  |  |
| W.C.  Ward –  Actor | "The line had broken because of the timber, and the first fire of the hidden Federals. A long line of us went down, three of us close together. There was a sharp, electric pain in the lower part of the body, and then a sinking sensation to the earth, and, falling, all things growing dark. The one and last ideas passing through the mind was, this is the last of earth."  Private W.C. Ward, 4th Alabama. |  |  |  |
| Joshua  Lawrence  Chamberlain Actor- | "The enemy was pouring a terrible fire upon us. His superior forces giving him a great advantage.  The air seemed to be alive with lead.  The lines at times were so near each other that the hostile gun barrels almost touched." |  |  | 05:26:55 |
| Narrator  David McCullough | The Southerners drove the Maine men from their positions five times.  Five times they fought their way back again.  Saplings were gnawed in two by bullets. |  |  |  |
| Joshua  Lawrence  Chamberlain Actor- | "At times, I saw around me more of the enemy than of my own men.  Gaps opening, swallowing, closing again.  Squads of stalwart men who had cut their way through us, disappearing as if translated.  All around, a strange, mingled roar." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David McCullough | In an hour and a half, a third of Chamberlain's men fell.  The sounds of battle now increased behind the 20th Maine.  Chamberlain assumed Little Round Top was being surrounded. |  |  |  |
| Joshua  Lawrence  Chamberlain Actor- | "Our ammunition is nearly all gone. We are using the cartridges from the boxes of our wounded comrades.  A critical moment has arrived, and we can remain as we are no longer.  We must advance or retreat. It must not be the latter. But how can it be the former?" |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Chamberlain's only choice was to attack.  And now, he conjured up an unlikely, textbook maneuver.  With his men almost out of ammunition, he ordered them to fix bayonets.  Then, while the right of his line held straight, he had his left, plunge down the hillside, all the while wheeling to the right, "like a great gate upon a post," an eyewitness said.  The Confederates were taken completely by surprise.  Those in the front ranks, dropped their weapons. Those behind, turned and ran. |  |  |  |
| Joshua  Lawrence  Chamberlain Actor- | "Many of the enemy's first line threw down their arms and surrendered.  An officer fired his pistol at my head with one hand, while he handed me his sword with the other." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The Confederates had gone only a few paces, when from their left, came a second horrifying surprise.  Chamberlain's missing Company B, which had found protection behind a stone wall, now rose and fired. |  |  |  |
| William C.  Oates –  Actor | "While one man was shot in the face, his right-hand comrade was shot in the side or back.  Some were struck simultaneously from two or three balls from different directions."  Colonel William C. Oates. |  |  | 05:29:15 |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Oates' men wavered, broke, and ran for their lives. |  |  |  |
| William C.  Oates –  Actor | "My dead and wounded were then nearly as great in number as those still on duty.  They literally covered the ground.  The blood stood in puddles in some places on the rocks. The ground was soaked with blood." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain's scanty force captured 400 Confederates.  Little Round Top held. |  |  |  |
| William T.  Livermore –  Actor | "The regiment we fought and captured was the 15th Alabama.  They said they never were whipped before, and never wanted to meet the 20th of Maine again."  Corporal William T. Livermore. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | On the slopes of Little Round Top, farmers from Talladega, Alabama, had fought fishermen from Presque Isle, Maine.  The two towns were each 650 miles from Gettysburg, which lay almost exactly on a direct line between them.  Throughout the day's fighting, Colonel A. S. Freemantle, a British observer traveling with Lee, was surprised to hear the sound of a Confederate band playing polkas and waltzes amidst the hissing and bursting of the shells.  But far out in front of the Union lines, General Sickles and his men were in desperate trouble. The Rebels were closing in from three sides.  Confederate shells tore branches from the peach trees and bounded among the men. |  |  |  |
| Robert H.  Carter –  Actor | "The hoarse and indistinguishable orders of commanding officers, the screaming and bursting of shells, canister, and shrapnel as they tore through the struggling masses of humanity, the death screams of wounded animals, the groans of their human companions, wounded and dying and trampling underfoot by hurrying batteries, riderless horses, and the moving lines of battle.  A perfect hell on earth, never perhaps to be equaled, certainly not to be surpassed, nor ever to be forgotten, in a man's lifetime.  It has never been effaced from my memory, day or night, for 50 years."  Private Robert H. Carter,  22nd Massachusetts. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | "The balls were whizzing so thick," a Texan remembered, "that it looked like a man could hold out a hat and catch it full." |  |  |  |
| Unknown  Union Staff  Officer –  Actor | "I was within a few feet of General Sickles, when he received the wound by which he lost his leg.  A terrific explosion seemed to shake the very earth, instantly followed by another.  I noticed that his pants and drawers at the knee were torn clear off to the leg, which was swinging loose.  He was carried from the field, coolly smoking a cigar." |  |  | 05:32:23 |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Sickles' men counterattacked, fell back, held, pushed the Confederates back, then retreated again through places still remembered for the ferocity of the fighting that happened there.  The Wheat Field. The Slaughter Pen. The Devil's Den. The Valley of Death.  Finally, the fighting subsided.  Of the 262 in one Minnesota regiment, only 47 survived unhurt. Eighty-two percent had fallen in less than five minutes. No Union regiment in the war suffered greater casualties.  Company F, of the 6th North Carolina, lost 100 percent. |  |  |  |
| Charles Batchelor –  Actor | "Dear Father:  Finally i came to poor Albert lying on the ground, wounded under the left eye. He had also had a ball shot through his left leg.  I had no one to help me bear him from the field.  I then called a captain of another company to assist me, and we bore Albert 600 yards through a dense swamp, all bleeding and sore with pain, before we could find any of the ambulance corps, to bear him off to the hospital.  Taking him in my arms, i assisted him in the stretcher, dropping a tear of grief upon his bleeding face, I bade him good-bye."  Charles Batchelor. |  |  |  |
| Daisy  Turner –  Daughter of Civil War Soldier | "Last night I wanted so to live, I seemed so young to go,  Last week I passed my birthday, I was just 19, you know,  When I thought of all I'd planned to do, it seemed so hard to die,  But now I've prayed to God for grace, and all my care's gone by.  And hear his voice grew weaker, as he proudly raised his head,  And whispered, good-bye, mother, and your soldier boy was dead." |  |  |  |
| Sallie Broadhead –  Actor | "Who was victorious, or with whom the advantage rests, no one here can tell.  Some think the Rebels were defeated, as there has been no boasting as on yesterday, and they look uneasy and by no means exultant.  I fear we are too hopeful. We shall see tomorrow."  Sallie Broadhead |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | As the sun set, the Union left and right still held.  Lee was sure an all-out Confederate attack on the center the next day would work. |  |  |  |
| James  Longstreet –  Actor | "When the second day's battle was over, General Lee pronounced it a success. But we had accomplished little toward victorious results."  General James Longstreet. |  |  | 05:35:47 |
| Shelby  Foote –  Actor | “The first day's fighting was so encouraging,  And the second day's fighting, came within an inch of doing it.  By that time, Longstreet said, Lee's blood was up.  And Longstreet said when his blood was up, there was no stopping him.  Longstreet tried to stop him.  And Lee said, "no, he's there," meaning the enemy, and I'm going to strike him." |  |  |  |
| Ed Bearss - Historian | General Longstreet, I think, had good reasons to worry about attacking the Union position at Gettysburg.  After all, it was his corps at Fredericksburg that mowed down the Union troops in front of the stone wall.  He could realize what the rifled musket could do, held in the hands of determined troops. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The next day was Pickett's charge. |  |  |  |
| Stephen B.  Oates –  Historian | Lee, by the summer of 1863, had come to believe that he was invincible, and so was the army of Northern Virginia.  The record would almost invite that, when you see how they had pummeled one Union general after another, and had defeated, or at least fought to a draw, the Army of the Potomac, almost at every battle at that point.  Lee really did think that if he asked his boys to do something, they would do it. That they would do anything.  He had come, by Gettysburg, then, to believe in his invincibility, and that of his men.  And it was his doom. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The third day began badly for Lee.  Ewell's men were driven back from Culp's Hill.  Jeb Stuart was supposed to get behind the Federals, and attack them from the rear. But Union cavalry stopped and held him. Thanks, in part, to a series of reckless charges, led by 23-year-old General George Armstrong Custer.  Everything now depended on Longstreet's attack on the Union center on Cemetery Ridge.  Meade saw it coming and was ready for him.  The man Lee chose to lead the assault, was dashing, perfumed, General George E. Pickett, who had never before taken his division into combat. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Actor | “It was an incredible mistake.  And there's scarcely a trained soldier who didn't know it was a mistake at the time it was done, except possibly Pickett himself, who was very happy he had a chance for glory.  But every man who looked out over that field, whether it's a sergeant or a lieutenant general, saw that it was a desperate endeavor, and, I'm sure, knew that it should not have been made.” |  |  | 05:38:41 |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Pickett's men filed into the woods, west of the Emmitsburg Road, and waited in the stifling heat.  To relieve the tension, some of the men pelted each other with green apples. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Actor | “They knew what they were going to do, but they had to wait.  And while they were waiting, formed and ready to move out, they were in defilade, among brush and things, and a rabbit jumped out of the bushes and took off, rearward.  And one of the soldiers looked after him and hollered, "Run, old hare. If I was an old hare, I'd run, too."  Surely. It wasn't all valor.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Exactly at 1:00, a giant artillery barrage, intended to soften up the Union defenses before the attack, began with a deafening explosion.  Meade had just left his commanders finishing their lunch.  As an orderly served them butter, a shell tore the man in two. |  |  |  |
| Pittsburg Gazette  Reporter –  Actor | "The storm broke upon us so suddenly that numbers of soldiers and officers -- who leaped from their tents or lazy siestas on the grass -- were stricken in their rising with mortal wounds, and died, some with cigars clamped between their teeth, some with pieces of food in their fingers”. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes –  Actor | “The flying iron and pieces of stone, struck some men down in every direction. About 30 men of our brigade were killed or wounded."  Elisha Hunt Rhodes. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | To keep up his men's courage, General Winfield Scott Hancock rode up and down the line, without flinching at the screaming shells.  A brigadier urged him to take cover. Hancock refused.  "There are times," he answered, "when a corps commander's life does not count."  Union artillery began to fire back. |  |  |  |
| Frank  Haskell –  Actor | "We sat and heard in silence.  What other expression had we that was not mean for such an awful universe of battle.  All in the rear of the crest for 1,000 yards was the field of the shells' blind fury.  Ambulances passing down the Tarrytown road with wounded men were struck. The hospitals were riddled."  Frank Haskell. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Suddenly, the Union guns fell silent.  To conserve ammunition for the attack, Meade was sure was coming, and to lure the enemy out into the open fields.  It worked.  At about 2:00, Pickett, asked if his men should go forward.  Longstreet, convinced the charge was folly, unable to bring himself to speak, only nodded. |  |  | 05:41:29 |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “If you stop to think about it, it would have been much harder not to go than to go. It would have taken a great deal of courage to say, "Marse Robert, I ain't going." Nobody's got that much courage.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Now Pickett gave the order.  "Up, men, and to your posts. Don't forget today that you are from old Virginia."  At 3:00, three divisions, 13,000 men, started out of the woods toward the stone wall, a mile and a half away, at a brisk, steady pace, covering about 100 yards a minute.  They were silent as they marched, forbidden this time to fire, or even to give the rebel yell, until they were on top of the enemy. |  |  |  |
| Frank  Haskell –  Actor | "More than half a mile their front extends, man touching man, rank pressing rank.  The red flags wave, their horsemen gallop up and down. The arms of 13,000 men, barrel and bayonet, gleam in the sun. A sloping forest of flashing steel.  Right on they move, as with one soul." |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes –  Actor | None on that crest now need be told the enemy is advancing.  Every eye could see his legions, an overwhelming resistless tide. An ocean of armed men sweeping upon us. All was orderly and still upon our crest. No noise and no confusion.  General Gibbon rode down the lines, cool and calm, and in an unimpassioned voice he said to the men, “Do not hurry, men, and fire too fast. Let them come up close before you fire, and then aim slow." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | "It was," a Union colonel recalled, “the most beautiful thing i ever saw."  Suddenly, the Union artillery on Cemetery Ridge and Little Round Top, opened fire. And a great moan went up from the Confederate line. "We could not help hitting them at every shot," a Federal officer recalled.  As many as 10 men at a time were destroyed by a single bursting shell.  A Confederate Lieutenant cried out, "Home, boys, home! Remember, home is over beyond those hills."  The waiting Union troops began chanting: "Fredericksburg! Fredericksburg! Fredericksburg!"  When the first Southerners came within 200 yards, Union General Alexander Hays told his men to fire. Eleven cannon and 1,700 muskets went off at once. Entire regiments disappeared. |  |  |  |
| Franklin  Sawyer –  Actor | "The Rebel lines were at once enveloped in a dense cloud of dust.  Arms, heads, blankets, guns, and knapsacks were tossed into the clear air.” |  |  | 05:45:21 |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Still the Confederates came on.  They reached the Union line at one place only. A crook in the stone wall known as the angle. |  |  |  |
| Charles Coffin –  Actor | "Seconds are centuries, minutes ages. Men fire into each other's faces, not five feet apart.  There are bayonet thrusts, sabre strokes, pistol shots. Men going down on their hands and knees, spinning round like tops, throwing out their arms, gulping blood, falling legless, armless, headless.  There are ghastly heaps of dead men.” |  |  |  |
| Ernest  Waitt –  Actor | "Foot to foot, body to body, and man to man, they struggled and pushed and strived and killed.  The mass of wounded and heaps of dead tangled their feet. And underneath the trampling mass, wounded men who could no longer stand fought, drowned in sweat, black with powder, red with blood." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The Confederates were led by General Lewis A. Armistead.  He stepped over the wall waving his hat on his sword, and seized a Union battery before he was shot down.  All the Confederates who breached the wall were killed or captured.  The Union line held.  Pickett's charge had failed.  Lee's army would never again penetrate so far into Northern territory. |  |  |  |
| Jesse  Young –  Actor | “Cheer after cheer arose from the triumphant boys in blue. Echoing from Round Top, from Cemetery Hill, resounding in the vale below, and making the very heavens throb."  Private Jesse Young |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | As the Rebels staggered back, Lee rode out to meet them.  “All this has been my fault," he told them. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “Probably his finest hour, was after the repulse of Pickett's charge.  He walked out into the field, met the men retreating, and said, "it is all my fault."  And he told them that. He wrote to the government, to Jefferson Davis, and said, "It was my fault. I asked more of men than should have been asked of them." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Pickett was horrified.  When told to rally his division for a possible Union counterattack, Pickett answered, "General Lee, I have no division now."  Pickett never forgave Lee. Years later he said, "that old man had my division slaughtered." |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “Gettysburg was the price the South paid for having R. E. Lee.  That was the mistake he made. The mistake of all mistakes.” |  |  | 05:49:11 |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | 6,500 men had fallen, or been captured. Half of those who marched out of the woods.  All 15 regimental commanders had been hit. So had 16 of 17 field officers,  three brigadier generals, and eight colonels.  Every one of the University Grays, a company made up of students from the University of Mississippi, had been killed or wounded.  "Gettysburg," Longstreet said, “had been ground of no value."  "That day," he added, "was the saddest of my life."  Almost a third of those engaged, 51,000 men, were lost.  The North suffered 23,000 casualties. The South, 28,000.  The 2,400 inhabitants of Gettysburg, now had ten times that number of dead and wounded men to care for. |  |  |  |
| Jennie  McCreary –  Actor | "Wounded men were brought into our houses and laid side by side in our halls and first-story rooms.  Carpets were so saturated with blood as to be unfit for further use.  Walls were bloodstained, as well as books that were used for pillows."  Jennie McCreary. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The Confederacy could not afford such sacrifices. All hope of invading the North was ended.  The next day, Lee began the long retreat back to Virginia.  As a summer downpour washed the blood from the grass, and pelted the wounded who rode in a wagon train that stretched 17 miles. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt  Rhodes –  Actor | "July 4th.  Was ever the nation's birthday celebrated in such a way before?  I wonder what the South thinks of us Yankees now. I think Gettysburg will cure the Rebels of any desire to invade the North again."  Elisha Hunt Rhodes. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Despite urgings from Washington, Meade refused to attack Lee's retreating army. Another opportunity to destroy the Army of Northern Virginia was lost. Once again, Lincoln was furious.  Meanwhile, Robert E. Lee wrote Jefferson Davis, offering to resign. |  |  |  |
| Robert E.  Lee –  Actor | "Dear President Davis,  I cannot even accomplish what I myself desire. How can I fulfill the expectations of others?  I generally feel the growing failure of my bodily strength. I anxiously urge the matter upon your Excellency for my belief that a younger and abler man than myself can readily be obtained."  Robert E. Lee. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The offer was not accepted. |  |  | 05:52:37 |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “William Faulkner, in Intruder in the Dust, says that for every Southern boy,  it's always in his reach, to imagine it being 1:00, on an early July day in 1863.  The guns are laid. The troops are lined up. The flags are already out of their cases, and ready to be unfurled.  But it hasn't happened yet.  And he can go back to the time, before the war was going to be lost.  And he can always have that moment for himself. |  |  |  |
| Albert  Batchelor –  Actor | "Hospital near Gettysburg.  My Dear Father,  It has pleased the God of battles, that I should number among the many wounded.  Through His infinite kindness and mercy, I am permitted to inform you that I have recovered. I was wounded in two places. First, through the hip, second, the ball entered the inner corner of my left eye and came out at the lower tip of my right ear.  Both are doing fine, and healed up.  Write to me. I may get the letter.  Your Devoted Son,  Albert Batchelor." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | After Gettysburg, the residents of Deer Isle, Maine, began scanning the casualty lists for familiar names.  Two privates, John Gray and Isaiah Eaton, were badly wounded and soon died in hospitals.  Both were buried in the new national cemetery at Gettysburg.  The streets grew quiet when news of Gettysburg reached Clarksville, Tennessee.  The 14th Tennessee Regiment had left town two years before with 960 men. When the battle of Gettysburg began, only 365 remained. By the end of the first day, there were 60 men left. By the end of the battle, there were only three. |  |  |  |
| Unknown Clarksville  Resident –  Actor | "A gloom rests over the city.  The hopes and affections of the people were wrapped in the regiment. Ah, what a terrible responsibility rests upon those who inaugurated this unholy war." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | On July 26, 1863, Sam Houston, first President of the Republic of Texas, and unshakable supporter of the American Union, died at Huntsville, Texas |  |  |  |
| Sam  Houston –  Actor | "I ask of Him who buildeth up and pulleth down nations, to unite us.  I wish, if this Union must be dissolved, that its ruins be the monument of my grave." |  |  | 05:55:50 |
| Daisy  Turner –  Daughter of Civil War Soldier | "I carved him out a headboard, as skillful as i could,  And if you wish to find it, I can tell you where it stood.  I send you back his hymn book, the cap he used to wear,  And a lock I cut the night before, of his bright curly hair.  I send you back his bible, the night before he died,  I turned its leaves together, and read it by his side.  I'll keep the belt he was wearing, he told me so to do,  It had a hole upon the side, just where the ball went through.  So now I've done his bidding, there's nothing more to tell,  But I shall always mourn with you, the boy we loved so well." |  |  |  |
| Sarah  Kenyon –  Actor | "Our hired man left to enlist, just as corn planting commenced. So I shouldered my hoe and have worked out ever since. I guess my services are just as acceptable as his." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | "No conflict in history," a journalist wrote, "was so much a woman's war as the Civil War." North and South, women looked for ways to help.  In the North, citizens formed the Sanitary Commission and the Christian Commission, to organize private relief, and check the spread of disease in the army. The disease rate was cut in half.  Sanitary commissioners prowled the camps, demanding they be cleaned up, reforming hospital conditions, insisting on better food, making sure blankets, shoes, medicines, and packages from home, were distributed fairly.  Prominent men ran the Sanitary Commission. New York lawyer George Templeton Strong was its treasurer.  But hundreds of thousands of women, in 7,000 local chapters, all over the North, did the work. Sewing, knitting, baking, wrapping bandages, raising funds, organizing rallies. |  |  |  |
| Mary  Livermore –  Actor | "If this war developed some of the most brutal, bestial, and devilish qualities lurking in the human race, it has also shown us how much of the angel there is in the best men and women."  Mary Livermore. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Mary Livermore, a Chicago minister's wife, organized Midwestern volunteers into 3,000 chapters.  And, when the army was threatened with scurvy, sent so much food South, that one reporter said, "a line of vegetables connected Chicago and Vicksburg."  Clara Barton, who stood barely five feet tall, distributed supplies by mule train, ministered to the wounded from Cedar Mountain to Antietam, and tirelessly lobbied Washington for better care for the men.  In a letter home, Katherine Wormsley, a nurse on a hospital ship, decried the confusion and chaos on board, but she ended, "good-bye, this is life."  George Templeton strong's wife Ellie, went south to serve on a hospital ship, too. |  |  |  |
| George  Templeton  Strong –  Actor | "Ellie's tact, sense, good nature, and energy conquered the USA Surgeon in charge at once. And coerced all his official dignity into hearty, grateful cooperation, in the care of his cargo of 500 cases, mostly bad ones.  I have never given her credit for tithe of the enterprise, pluck, discretion, and force of character she has shown.  God Bless her." |  |  | 05:59:35 |
| Unknown Confederate–  Actor | "We had no Sanitary Commission in the South. We were too poor.  We had no line of rich and populous cities closely connected by rail.  With us, every house was a hospital." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Southern women worked as nurses, too, despite criticism that it was unladylike for them to care for ruffians.  Sallie Thompkins of Richmond, and a staff of only six, nursed 1,333 wounded men in her private hospital, and kept all but 73 of them alive.  A record unmatched by any other Civil War hospital, North or South.  Mary Ann Bickerdyke, a Quaker widow, and Sanitary Commission agent, traveled with the Union army through four years and 19 battles.  Assisting at amputations, brewing barrels of coffee, rounding up cattle and chickens and eggs to feed to the grateful men, who called her Mother Bickerdyke.  By the end of the war General Sherman simply said, "she ranks me."  Every day since late May, U.S. Grant's 200 Union guns had pounded Vicksburg from land, while Admiral David Porter's gunboats battered it from the river. |  |  |  |
| Emma  Balfour –  Actor | "They fire at the city, thinking that they will wear out the women and children and sick, and General Pemberton will be obliged surrender the place on that account.  But they little know the spirit of the Vicksburg women and children." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Civilians dug caves in the yellow clay hillsides.  Some with several rooms, fitted out with rugs and beds and chairs, and staffed with slaves.  But food ran low.  The city's defenders were reduced to eating mules, horses, and dogs.  The Vicksburg Gazette had to be printed on the back of flowered wallpaper. There was no more newsprint. |  |  |  |
| Dora  Miller –  Actor | "We are utterly cut off from the world.  Surrounded by a circle of fire.  The shower of shells goes on day and night.  People do nothing but eat what they can get, sleep when they can, and dodge the shells."  Dora Miller |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | It was "living like plant roots," one woman said.  Union troops began calling Vicksburg "prairie dog town."  Finally, after 48 days of siege, on July 4th, the same day that Lee began his retreat from Gettysburg, 31,000 Confederates surrendered.  Confederate General John C. Pemberton said it would be an act of "cruel inhumanity" to subject his men to the terrible ordeal any longer. Besides, he added, "I am a Northern man. I know my people. I know we can get better terms from them on the fourth of July, than on any other day of the year."  The stars and stripes was raised above the Vicksburg courthouse.  At the celebration aboard Admiral Porter's flagship on the Mississippi, Grant was the only one who did not touch the wine offered him, but contented himself with a cigar. |  |  | 06:02:54 |
| William Tecumseh Sherman.-  Actor | "Grant is now deservedly the hero. Belabored with praise by those who accused him a month ago of all the sins in the calendar, and who next week will turn against him if so blows the popular breeze. Vox Populi, Vox Humbug."  William Tecumseh Sherman. |  |  |  |
| Henry  Adams –  Actor | "It is now conceded that all idea of British intervention is at an end.  I want to hug the Army of the Potomac for Gettysburg, I want to get the whole Army of Vicksburg drunk at my own expense.  I want to fight some small man, and lick him."  Henry Adams. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The Confederacy was cut in two. The Mississippi had become a Union highway. "The father of waters," Lincoln said, "again flows unvexed to the sea." |  |  |  |
| Confederate  Private –  Actor | "We have lost the Mississippi, and our nation is divided, and there's not enough left to fight for." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The 4th of July would not be celebrated in Vicksburg again for 81 years. |  |  |  |
| George Templeton  Strong | "I found for my substitute, a big Dutch boy of 20 or thereabouts, for the moderate consideration of $1,100.  My alter ego could make a good soldier if he tried. I gave him my address and told him to write to me, if he found himself in the hospital or in trouble, and that I would try to do what I properly could to help him."  George Templeton Strong. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In July, Lincoln issued the first Federal draft call. All able bodied men, between 20 and 45 were enrolled. But the law favored the well to do. Any man willing to pay $300, as a commutation fee, or hire a substitute, to serve in his place, was exempt. |  |  |  |
| Thaddeus Stevens –  Actor | "The law is a rich man's bill, made for him who cannot raise that sum."  Senator Thaddeus Stevens. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The fathers of Theodore and Franklin Roosevelt hired substitutes.  So did Andrew Carnegie and J.P. Morgan.  And two future presidents, Chester A. Arthur and Grover Gleveland.  Bounty jumping became a profession. Men signed up from one district long enough to receive a reward for enlisting, then deserted to do the same elsewhere.  One man repeated the process 32 times before he was caught.  Shaker elder Frederick Evans came to see Lincoln, hoping to have his pacifist community excused from military service.  "We need regiments of such men as you," Lincoln said, but granted Elder Evans' request. The Shakers were among the first conscientious objectors.  On Deer Isle, two prominent local citizens began going house to house delivering induction notices.  149 men were called for the new draft, 42 never showed up, 33 were exempted for medical reasons, two paid substitutes. And one man sold his house and left his wife and several children homeless, rather than desert them for the front. |  |  | 06:06:17 |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | New York City contemplated secession from the Union, too.  And they wanted to be declared an open city.  There was a great deal of resentment, of the influx of blacks, and a lot of resistance to the draft. Because men could get better-paying jobs than they'd ever had, and the last thing they wanted was to go to the war.  There was a good deal of resentment, too, that if you could scrape up $300, you could be exempt.  And all those resentments flared up into what's called the New York Draft Riots. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | No group was more outraged than the immigrant Irish of New York, who feared the blacks, who competed for the lowest-paying jobs, and for whose freedom they did not wish to fight.  Democratic politicians fanned their anger. |  |  |  |
| Horatio Seymour –  Actor | "Remember this. That the bloody and treasonable and revolutionary doctrine of public necessity can be proclaimed by a mob, as well as by a government."  Governor Horatio Seymour, New York. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | On Sunday, July 12th, when the names of the first draftees appeared in the newspapers, alongside long lists of those who had fallen at Gettysburg, a mostly Irish mob attacked and destroyed the draft office.  Then fanned out across the city.  For three days, the East Side of Manhattan belonged to the mob.  Blacks were their main targets. They burned black boarding houses, a black church, a black orphanage. Then lynched a crippled black coachman, and set his corpse on fire, while chanting "Hurrah for Jeff Davis!" |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong –  Actor | "July 14th  Fire bells clanking as they have clanked at intervals throughout the evening.  Many details come in of yesterday's brutal, cowardly, ruffianism and plunder.  Shops were cleaned out, and black men hanged in Carmine Street for no offense but that of negritude."  George Templeton Strong. |  |  | 06:09:22 |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Finally, exhausted troops from Gettysburg, arrived to impose order.  More than 100 people had been killed.  Bloody riots broke out throughout the North, as opposition to the war increased.  "The nation," wrote the editor of the Washington Times, "is at this time in a state of revolution, north, south, east, and west." |  |  |  |
| Abraham  Lincoln –  Actor | "You say you will not fight to free negroes. Some of them seem willing to fight for you.  When victory is won, there will be some black men who remember that with silent tongue and clenched teeth, and steady eye, and well-poised bayonet, they have helped mankind on to this great consummation."  Abraham Lincoln. |  |  |  |
| Frederick Douglass –  Actor | "The Negro is the key to the situation. The pivot upon which the whole rebellion turns.  This war, disguise it as they may, is virtually nothing more or less, than perpetual slavery against universal freedom. And to this end, the free states will have to come."  Frederick Douglass |  |  |  |
| Wendell Phillips –  Actor | "Will the slave fight? If any man asks you, tell him no. But if anyone asks you will a negro fight. Tell him yes."  Wendell Phillips |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Since the first shots were fired, abolitionists had been pressing the government to put blacks into battle.  Congress authorized colored troops in 1862, but a year went by before the first black men put on blue coats, to serve under white officers. |  |  |  |
| Ulysses  Grant –  Actor | "This, with the emancipation of the Negro, is the heaviest blow yet given the Confederacy.  By arming the Negro, we have added a powerful ally.  They will make good soldiers."  Ulysses S. Grant. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Black privates were paid $10 a month, $3.00 less than whites.  Several regiments served without pay, rather than submit to that inequality.  Blacks were rarely promoted. |  |  |  |
| Barbara  Fields –  Historian | Many of the Union soldiers, who began with stereotypical assumptions about black men, who assumed that they couldn't fight, that they would hand their weapons over to the enemy, that they would run, and so on, had their minds changed in the grimmest circumstances.  And some of the documents that tell the story of how people's ideas were transformed, are not the sort of documents that you enjoy reading.  Because they speak of how people became companions in death, of how white soldiers learned to respect their black comrades when they watched how they reacted, as people all around were being killed, being butchered. |  |  | 06:12:41 |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | On July 18th, just three days after the draft riots ended, 650 men of the all-black 54th Massachusetts regiment, assaulted a Confederate position, at Battery Wagner, South Carolina.  Their commander was a Boston abolitionist's son, Colonel Robert Gould Shaw. |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong –  Actor | "It is not too much to say that if this Massachusetts 54th had faltered when its trial came, 200,000 troops for whom it was a pioneer would never have been put into the field. But it did not falter.  It made Fort Wagner such a name for the colored race as Bunker Hill has been for 90 years to the white Yankees." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Forty percent of the regiment did not return, including Colonel Shaw. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | Shaw led their attack on Battery Wagner. They were cut to pieces. They never should have made that charge either.  And when it was over, the Confederates were in control.  And there was very hard feeling against the white officers in black regiments.  And Shaw was simply thrown in a burial pit with his soldiers.  Shaw's father, later said, he was proud to have him buried that way. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | When the flag bearer fell, and the order to withdraw was given, Sergeant William Carney seized the colors, and made it back to his lines, despite bullets in the head, chest, right arm, and leg.  He was the first of 23 blacks awarded the medal of honor, though he had to wait 37 years to get it. |  |  |  |
| Lewis  Douglass –  Actor | "Fort Wagner.  My Dear Amelia,  I have been in two fights, and am unhurt. I am about to go in another, I believe, tonight.  Our men fought well on both occasions. How I got out of that fight alive I cannot tell, but i am here.  My dear girl, I hope again to see you. I must bid you farewell.  Should I be killed, remember, if I die, I die in a good cause.  I wish we had 100,000 colored troops. We would put an end to this war."  Sergeant Lewis Douglass. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | They constituted less than one percent of the North's population, yet by the war's end, they would make up nearly one tenth of the Northern army. Most of them freed blacks and runaway slaves.  Eighty five percent of the eligible black male population had signed on.  180,000 fought to free their people. |  |  | 06:16:28 |
| Frederick  Douglass –  Actor | "Once let the black man get upon his person, the brass letters U.S.  Let him get an eagle on his buttons, and a musket on his shoulder, bullets in his pockets, and there's no power on earth which can deny that he has earned the right to citizenship in the United States." |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman –  Actor | "The whole army of the United States could not restore the institution of slavery in the South.  They can't get back their slaves, any more than they can get back their dead grandfathers. It is dead."  William Tecumseh Sherman. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Once a black Union soldier spotted his former owner among a group of Confederate prisoners.  "Hello, Master," he said, "Bottom rail on top this time." |  |  |  |
| Jerry  Sullivan –  Actor | "Folks talk about the fighting being nearly over. But I believe there's a heap yet to come.  Let the colored men accept the offer of the president and cabinet. Take arms, join the army, then we'll whip the Rebels, even if Longstreet and all the streets of the South concentrate at Chattanooga."  Jerry Sullivan. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Hard against the Tennessee River, at the meeting point of two strategically crucial railroads, the City of Chattanooga guarded the gateway to the Eastern Confederacy, and the Rebel war industries in Georgia.  For five months, Union General William Rosecrans resisted Lincoln's urgent calls to drive Braxton Bragg's Confederates out of Tennessee and seize Chattanooga.  When summer came, Lincoln demanded more decisive action, and at long last Rosecrans moved, launching a series of brilliant and almost bloodless flanking maneuvers.  In 10 days, he drove Bragg 80 miles, through a relentless Tennessee rain. "No Presbyterian rain, either," a soldier remembered, "but a genuine Baptist downpour."  In September, Bragg abandoned Chattanooga, and kept backing away until just over the Tennessee line in Georgia, where he gathered his forces, now bolstered by Longstreet's Virginia veterans, along a meandering creek called Chickamauga. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | Chickamauga, is like all Indian words, interpreted to mean the River of Death. God knows what it really means.  Chickamauga was a horrendous battle. Ah very, a lot of breakthroughs, a lot of hand-to-hand combat, a long, ragged retreat. A glorious southern victory which was unexploited.  All the western heroes were there, from Forrest on down. It was-- it's a great battle. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | At 8 a.m. on the morning of September 18th, Nathan Bedford Forrest's cavalry ran into a brigade of Federals, heading for a little bridge over the creek. By noon, one of Forrest's officers reported, "the dead were piled upon each other like cordwood, to make passage for advancing columns." By nightfall, both lines held.  On the second day of fierce fighting, Rosecrans committed a fatal mistake, ordering his troops to close a gap in the Union line, that wasn't there. In the process, he opened up a real one, and Longstreet's Confederates stormed through. The Union forces broke and ran. "They have fought their last man," Longstreet said, "and even he is running."  But George Henry Thomas, a Union man from Virginia, refused to retreat, and organized a stubborn, last-minute defense that kept the battle from becoming a rout, and earned him the nickname the "Rock of Chickamauga."  The Northern army limped back into Chattanooga. Rosecrans was "confused and stunned," Lincoln said, "like a duck hit on the head."  Bottled up in Chattanooga, the Union forces were miserable. Cold, vermin-infested, cut off from all but a thin trickle of supplies, they demolished houses and hacked down every tree and fence in town for fuel. The Confederates besieging the city were in no better shape. |  |  | 06:20:38 |
| Sam  Watkins –  Actor | "In the very acme of our privations and hunger, when the army was most dissatisfied and unhappy, we were ordered into line, to be reviewed by the Honorable Jefferson Davis.  When he passed us, with his great retinue of staff officers at full gallop, cheers greeted him with the words, "send us something to eat, Master Jeff.  I'm hungry. I'm hungry!"  Sam Watkins. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In October, Ulysses S. Grant, now in command of all Union armies from the Appalachians to the Mississippi, hurried to Chattanooga and immediately replaced Rosecrans with Thomas.  Braxton Bragg's Confederate army now occupied the six mile crest of Missionary Ridge, east of the city. Confederate guns were massed on the 2,000-foot summit of nearby Lookout Mountain. south of town. Grant, down in Chattanooga, resolved to drive them off.  The Battle of Chattanooga began on November 24th. Union troops stormed Lookout Mountain, fighting through such dense fog that it was remembered as the "Battle Above the Clouds."  During the night, a besieged Bragg withdrew from the summit of Lookout Mountain to nearby Missionary Ridge. Just before dawn the next morning, Federals stepped out onto an overhanging rock, and as the sun rose, unfurled their flag. Thousands of Union men in the valley below, broke into a thunderous cheer. The Union had won.  The next Union task was to take Missionary Ridge. In command at the bottom of the hill, was 115-pound General Phil Sheridan, who pulled a flask from his pocket, and toasted the Confederate gunners above him.  "Here's at you," he said. The rebels opened fire, spattering him and his officers with dirt. "That was ungenerous," Sheridan said, “I'll take your guns for that."  "Who ordered those men up the hill?" Grant asked. "No one," an aide replied, "They started up without orders. When those fellows get started, all hell can't stop them." |  |  |  |
| L.G.  Bennett –  Actor | "Those defending the heights became more and more desperate as our men approached the top. They shouted “Chickamauga”, as though the word itself were a weapon. They thrust cartridges into guns by the handful. They lighted the fuses of shells and rolled them down, but nothing could stop the force of the charge." |  |  | 06:25:19 |
| Confederate  Officer –  Actor | "John Williams, South Carolina, killed at Missionary Ridge, Tennessee, November 1863." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Under Grant's leadership, the Union army had broken the Confederate siege at Chattanooga. It was another triumph for Grant.  "It was a great victory," Sherman said, "the neatest and cleanest battle I was ever in, and Grant deserves the credit of it all."  In the weeks that followed, everybody posed on Lookout Mountain.  General Thomas ordered a Union cemetery laid out on a hill called Orchard Knob, that had seen savage fighting. A chaplain asked if the burial should be by state. "No, no, mix them up," Thomas said, "I'm tired of States rights."  At the Capitol in Washington, at noon on December 2, 1863, a 19-foot bronze goddess of "Freedom Triumphant" was at last hoisted into place.  The great dome was finished. |  |  |  |
| Walt Whitman –  Actor | "I like to stand aside and look a long, long while, up at the dome. It comforts me somehow."  Walt Whitman |  |  |  |
| Benjamin Franklin Jackson –  Actor | "In Camp, December 3, 1863.  It is now just 21 days till Christmas. I would give anything if I could be there to take Christmas with you.  Martha, if you get this letter and have any chance, I wish you would send me an old woolen quilt, for I've not got any blankets, and we can't get any, so I fare bad of a cold night."  Benjamin Franklin Jackson. |  |  |  |
| Mary  Chesnut –  Actor | "Christmas day, 1863.  General Buckner had seen a Yankee pictorial. Angels were sent down from heaven to bear up Stonewall's soul.  They could not find it, flew back, sorrowing.  When they got to the golden gates above, they found Stonewall, by a rapid flank movement, had already cut his way in."  Mary Chesnut. |  |  |  |
| Christian  Fleetwood –  Actor | "This year has brought about many changes, that at the beginning would have been thought impossible.  The close of the year finds me a soldier for the cause of my race.  May God Bless the cause, and enable me in the coming year, to forward it on."  Christian Fleetwood. |  |  |  |
| Stephen B.  Oates –  Historian | It was an extremely religious age. Both sides wanted to get right with God.  John Brown, said he was an instrument in the hands of God, to bring him to Harpers Ferry to free the slaves, and perhaps begin the Civil War.  Abraham Lincoln, finally felt that he, too, was an instrument in the hand of God, and that God was punishing the country for the crime of slavery.  Robert E. Lee, said that he was an instrument in the hands of God, and said at Gettysburg that it's all in God's hands, and then sent the cream of his army to its doom.  They really felt that providence was at work in this war.  As Lincoln said, "We both pray to the same God. We both invoked him.  We both said we were on his side."  But it wasn't until 1863, indeed at the end of the war, that it became clear where God's judgment was coming down, and that was on the whole country.  It must now atone in blood for its complicity in wickedness. The wickedness of slavery. |  |  | 06:29:32 |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The Civil War was fought in 10,000 places.  At Big Bend, Big Sandy, and the Big Sunflower River. From Bunker Hill, West Virginia, and Blue Springs, Tennessee, and Cairo, Illinois, to Golgotha Church, Georgia, and Christianburg, Kentucky. At Citrus Point on the Cimarron River, and along Cowskin Bottom. At Pebbly Run and La Glorieta Pass.  And Gettysburg. |  |  |  |
| James W.  Symington -  Former Member of Congress / Historian | I think if I had my choice of all the moments, to be present at, in that war period, it would be at Gettysburg, during Lincoln's delivery of his speech.  Maybe to have seen him craft those beautiful words, those marvelous healing words, and then deliver them.  They were for everyone, for all time. They subsumed the entire war, and all in it. It showed his compassion for everyone. His love for his people.  That's where I'd like to be. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | On November 19th, Lincoln traveled to Gettysburg to dedicate the new Union cemetery.  The featured speaker was Edward Everett of Massachusetts, a diplomat, clergyman, and celebrated orator. The president had been invited, almost as an afterthought, to offer a few "appropriate remarks."  Everett spoke for not quite two hours, then Lincoln rose.  A local photographer took his time focusing. Presumably the president could be counted on to go on for a while.  But he spoke just 269 words.  He started off by reminding his audience that just 87 years had passed since the founding of the nation, and then he went on to embolden the Union cause with some of the most stirring words ever spoken.  Lincoln was heading back to his seat before the photographer could open the shutter. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “He felt that he had failed, that it was a poor speech, that the people didn't like it, it was so brief, less than two minutes.  He felt that he had failed.  Lamon, his friend, Ward Lamon, was sitting next to him on the stand.  When he sat down, there was just a sprinkling of applause, and he said, "Lamon, that speech won't scour."  That's what you say about a plow in the prairies, when the mud doesn't come off it.” |  |  | 06:33:00 |
| Editor  Chicago Times –  Actor | "The cheek of every American must tingle with shame, as he reads the silly, flat, dish-watery utterances, of the man who has to be pointed out to intelligent foreigners as the President of the United States."  Chicago Times. |  |  |  |
| Edward  Everett –  Actor | "Dear Mr. President,  I should be glad if I could flatter myself, that I came as near to the central idea of the occasion, in two hours, as you did in two minutes."  Edward Everett. |  |  |  |
| Abraham  Lincoln –  Actor | "Fourscore and seven years ago, our fathers brought forth upon this continent a new nation, conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal.  Now we are engaged in a great Civil War, testing whether that nation or any nation so conceived and so dedicated can long endure.  We are met here on a great battlefield of that war.  We have come to dedicate a portion of it, as a final resting place for those who here gave their lives, that their nation might live.  It is altogether fitting and proper that we should do this.  But in a larger sense, we cannot dedicate, we cannot consecrate, we cannot hallow, this ground.  The brave men, living and dead, who struggled here, have consecrated it far above our poor power to add or detract.  The world will little note, nor long remember, what we say here.  But can never forget what they did here.  It is for us, the living, rather, to be dedicated here to the unfinished work which they have thus far so nobly carried on.  It is rather for us to be here dedicated to the great task remaining before us. That from these honored dead, we take increased devotion to that cause, for which they here, gave the last full measure of devotion.  That we here highly resolve that these dead shall not have died in vain.  That this nation, under God, shall have a new birth of freedom.  And that government of the people, by the people, for the people, shall not perish from the earth." |  |  |  |
| **Chapter / Episode 6 – Valley of the Shadow of Death: 1864** | | | | |
| Walt  Witman –  Actor | "I have just this moment heard from the front.  There is nothing yet of a movement, but each side is continually on the alert, expecting something to happen.  To think we are to have here soon, what I've seen so many times, the awful loads and trains and boatloads of bloody and pale, and wounded young men again. For that is what we certainly will have. I see all the signs here."  Walt Whitman. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “Men's beliefs had a startling simplicity to them.  For example, a soldier in line at Gettysburg was told, "you will advance a mile across that open valley and take that hill."  I, for one, would say, General, i don't think we should do this. I don't believe we can get there.  But they took it in a matter of course.  You must remember they fought for four years. Which was a long time.  This simplicity was severely tested, but they never lost it.  Duty, bravery under adversity. Very simple virtues, and they had them.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In 1864, a rebellion in China, that cost 20 million lives, finally came to an end.  In 1864, the Czar's armies conquered Turkistan, and Tolstoy finished War and Peace.  In 1864, Louis Pasteur pasteurized wine, the Geneva Convention established the neutrality of battlefield hospitals, and Karl Marx founded the International Workingmen's Association in London and New York.  Nevada became a state, and for the first time, the words "In God We Trust" appeared on a U.S. Coin.  In 1864, the Civil War was in its fourth year. Union ships controlled the Mississippi. The Union blockade was tightening. Lee had been beaten at Gettysburg. Vicksburg and Chattanooga had fallen.  As Confederate hopes began to dim, Union objectives became clear.  Attack the heart of the Confederacy at Atlanta, and destroy Lee's Army of Northern Virginia.  But there was still no real end in sight.  As Robert E. Lee and Ulysses S. Grant prepared to confront each other for the first time, neither knew what awaited their armies along a 100-mile crescent east of Richmond. To win, one would have to outthink as well as outfight the other.  A nation would try to hold an election in the midst of civil war. After three and one half years of war, Abraham Lincoln's prospects for re-election did not seem bright.  For Elisha Hunt Rhodes, stuck in the Union trenches outside Petersburg, the war stretched on interminably. To Confederate Sam Watkins at Franklin, Tennessee, it seemed "the death angel was there to gather its last harvest." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | That same year, William Tecumseh Sherman, now in command of the Union's western armies, would set out through the mountains of Georgia for Atlanta.  Lieutenant Washington Roebling, who thought he'd seen the worst at Gettysburg, came close to losing his faith in the Union cause.  In Washington, a sometime poet, Walt Whitman, worked as a nurse in the crowded union hospitals, until they overwhelmed him.  In 1864, the pictures that would come back from the war would be too horrible to look at for years to come. |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman –  Actor | "It is enough to make the whole world start at the awful amount of death and destruction that now stalks abroad.  I begin to regard the death and mangling of a couple thousand men as a small affair. A kind of morning dash.  And it may be well, that we become hardened.  The worst of the war is not yet begun."  William Tecumseh Sherman. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In early 1864, Spotswood Rice, a slave on a tobacco plantation, escaped and made his way to Glasgow, Missouri, where he enlisted in the Union Army. |  |  |  |
| Spotswood  Rice –  Actor | "Benton Barracks Hospital, St. Louis, Missouri.  My Children:  A few lines to let you know that I have not forgot you, and that I want to see you as bad as ever. I feel confident that I will get you.  Your Miss Kitty said that I tried to steal you. To steal his own flesh and blood.  I once thought I had some respect for them, but my respect is worn-out, and I have no sympathy for slave holders."  Spotswood Rice. |  |  |  |
| Nathaniel Hawthorne –  Actor | "The Willard Hotel may be much more justly called the center of Washington, and the Union, than either the Capitol, the White House, or the State Department. Everybody may be seen there."  Nathaniel Hawthorne. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | On the afternoon of March 8, 1864, a stubby, rumpled man made his way  across the crowded lobby of Willard's Hotel. A 14-year-old boy carrying a satchel followed in his wake. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “He didn't have his three stars on yet, because he wasn't getting his commission until the next day.  He went to the desk and asked for a room.  There had been many generals in and out of Willard's.  The desk clerk said, "I've got something on the top floor." Grant said, "that will do fine", and signed the register.  When the clerk looked down and saw U.S. Grant and son, his eyes bugged out. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Word spread that the man Lincoln had recently placed at the head of the Union armies was in the hotel.  When he and his son entered the crowded dining room, everyone stood and cheered. Afterwards, he strolled two blocks, up Pennsylvania avenue to the White House, where President and Mrs. Lincoln were giving a reception. |  |  |  |
| Abraham  Lincoln –  Actor | "I wish to express my entire satisfaction with what you have done up to this time, so far as I can understand it. The particulars of your plans I neither know nor seek to know."  Abraham Lincoln. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Three years earlier, Grant had been notable only for his failures.  Now he was the conqueror of Donelson, Vicksburg, and Chattanooga, come to Washington to receive the rank of lieutenant general, last held by George Washington.  He had command now of 533,000 men. The largest army in the world. |  |  |  |
| Ulysses S. Grant –  Actor | "I want to push on as rapidly as possible to save hard fighting.  These terrible battles are very good things to read about for persons who lose no friends.  I am in favor of having as little of it as possible. The way to avoid it is to push forward."  Ulysses S. Grant. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Hiram Ulysses Grant was born at Point Pleasant, Ohio, on April 27, 1822.  His father Jesse ran a tannery, and its stench was one of his first memories.  He was sensitive and withdrawn with people, but wonderful with horses.  His father thought him hopelessly impractical, and got him an appointment to West Point.  A clerk mistakenly registered the boy as Ulysses S. Grant. Rather than complain, he lived with it. His friends called him Sam.  He was graduated in the middle of his class. The next year he was engaged to Julia Dent, the daughter of a Missouri slave owner. He adored her, and she bore him four children.  Grant thought the Mexican War wicked, but went anyway.  "I considered my supreme duty was to my flag," he wrote, and served bravely in battle, riding alone through a hail of enemy fire to bring ammunition to his men.  After the war, the army sent him to a remote California outpost, where, lonely and miserable without his family, he began to drink. |  |  |  |
| Ulysses S. Grant –  Actor | "Dear Julia:  I sometimes get so anxious to see you and our children, that I am almost tempted to resign, and trust to providence and my own exertions, for a living.  Whenever I get to thinking up the subject, however, poverty, poverty begins to stare me in the face." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In 1854, he left the army and returned east to rejoin Julia and work some land his father-in-law gave him.  He called it "hardscrabble farm" and couldn't make a go of it.  He tried bill collecting, real estate, raising potatoes, even peddling firewood in the street. Nothing worked.  One year, in St. Louis, he pawned his watch to buy Christmas presents for his family.  He had been reduced to working as a clerk in his father's harness shop in Galena, Illinois, when the war began.  As a West Point graduate, Grant was a scarce commodity. He re-entered the army and never looked back. |  |  |  |
| John A.  Rawlins –  Actor | "In this season, I saw energies in Grant.  He dropped a stooped-shouldered way of walking, and set his hat forward on his head, in a careless fashion."  John A. Rawlins. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | He was promoted to Brigadier General, won a small battle at Belmont, Missouri, then a big one at Fort Donelson, at a time when other Northern generals were going down to defeat. |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman –  Actor | "His soldiers do not salute him.  They only watch him with a certain sort of familiar reverence. They observe him coming and, rising to their feet, gather on each side of the way to see him pass.  No Napoleonic displays, no ostentation, no speech, no superfluous flummery.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | He was distinctly unglamorous, and had only one personal attendant, a runaway Missouri slave named Bill.  He didn't like marching bands, and could recognize only two tunes. "One was Yankee Doodle," he said, “and the other wasn't."  He insisted that his meat be cooked dry, because even a suggestion of blood on his plate sickened him.  Once, on the eve of a battle, in which thousands of men would die, he had a teamster tied to a tree for six hours, for mistreating a horse.  He was methodical, dogged, and uncommonly clear-headed under fire. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | Grant the general has many qualities. But he had a thing that's very necessary for a great general.  He had what they call four o’clock in the morning courage.  You could wake him up at four o’clock in the morning, and tell him they just turned his right flank, and he would be as cool as a cucumber.  He had an ability to concentrate. He would be writing at his desk, and need something across the room.  He would get up, never getting out of that crouched position, get it, and sit down again without ever having straightened up.  It's an example of how he could concentrate. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | He drank bourbon, and he got drunk easily.  A Galena neighbor, John Rawlins, was made his chief of staff. And took it upon himself to keep Grant sober. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | Grant never got drunk when his wife was around.  There was only two conditions Grant would drink under.  One was his wife wasn't there, the other was there wasn't anything going on.  He went on a true bender during the Vicksburg campaign, but it was when nothing was happening.  Whether it was anything sexual, about his wife being out of touch, I'm not sure about. But I do know that boredom would make him drink. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Now he traveled south to Meade's headquarters, at Brandy Station, near Culpeper, Virginia,  The largest Union encampment of the war. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt  Rhodes –  Actor | "April 19.  Yesterday the 6th Corps was reviewed by Lieutenant General U.S. Grant.  He is a short, thickset man, and rode his horse like a bag of meal.  I was a little disappointed in the appearance, but i liked the look of his eye."  Elisha Hunt Rhodes. |  |  |  |
| New England  Officer –  Actor | "We all felt at last that the boss had arrived." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | While Grant conferred with Meade, members of his staff described Grant's triumphs In the west.  Veterans of the Army of the Potomac were not impressed.  "That may be," one said, "but Grant never met Bobby Lee." |  |  |  |
| Mary Chesnut  Actor | "Can anybody say they know the general?  I doubt it. He looks so cold, quiet, and grand |  |  |  |
| Henry  Adams –  Actor | I think that Lee should have been hanged.  It was all the worse that he was a good man and a fine character and acted conscientiously.  It's always the good men who do the most harm in the world."  Henry Adams. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | Lee is one of the most difficult people to talk about because he's been immortalized. Or as they call him now, some people, "the Marble Man."  He's been dehumanized by the glory and the worship.  He was a warm, outgoing man, always had time for any private soldier's complaint.  Once a northern soldier, being marched to the rear as a prisoner, complained to Lee in person that someone had taken his hat. He said, "that man got it." Lee made the man give him his hat back. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The man Grant faced across the Rapidan River in Virginia, came from a family as celebrated as Grant's was obscure.  Robert E. Lee was born in 1807, at Stratford in Westmoreland County, Virginia, and was raised by his mother.  She taught him to revere General Washington, a neighbor remembered, to practice self-denial and self-control" in all things.  His father, "Light Horse Harry Lee”, had been a friend and favorite lieutenant of George Washington.  But Light Horse Harry also squandered two wives' fortunes, before deserting his family for the West Indies.  At West Point, Robert E. Lee did not earn a single demerit. Classmates called him "the marble model," but liked him in spite of his perfection. He was graduated second in his class in 1829.  In 1831, he married Martha Washington's granddaughter, Mary Custis. She bore him seven children, and endured his long absences as best she could.  The mansion at Arlington with its 250 slaves, was her home, before it was his.  Appointed to the prestigious corps of engineers, he was three times promoted for bravery during the Mexican War, where he once met a young Ulysses S. Grant.  Superintendent of West Point, captor of John Brown, he was, at the start of the war, the nation's most promising soldier.  In 1861, Lee refused command of the Union Army, and followed his state out of the Union.  Not because he approved of slavery or secession, but because he believed his first duty was to Virginia. |  |  | 06:56:56 |
| Robert E.  Lee –  Actor | "I did only what my duty demanded. I could have taken no other course without dishonor.” |  |  |  |
| Christina  Bond –  Actor | "The man who stood before us was the realized King Arthur.  The soul that looked out of his eyes was as honest and fearless as when it first looked out on life.  One saw the character as clear as crystal, without complication, and the heart as tender as that of ideal womanhood." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | A Union girl watching Lee ride past her Pennsylvania home said, "I wish he were ours."  Early in the war he was ridiculed as "the king of spades", because of his fondness for entrenching, and "Granny Lee" because of his gray hair and strict ways.  But after he drove McClellan off the peninsula, stopped Pope at Second Manassas, demolished Burnside at Fredericksburg, and destroyed Hooker at Chancellorsville, all despite overwhelming odds, he won the unshakable confidence of Jefferson Davis, and the unqualified love of his officers and men. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | He is a very great general.  And he's superb on both the offensive and the defensive.  He took long chances, but he took them because he had to.  If Grant had not had superior numbers, he might have taken chances as long as Lee took.  The only way to win was with long chances, and it made him brilliant. |  |  | 06:59:58 |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | No one ever called him Bobby Lee to his face.  His men called him "Marse Robert" or "Uncle Robert."  He had a terrible temper, which he worked all his life to control.  When angered, his icy stare was unforgettable. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | There was a young man brought before him for some infraction of the rules.  And can you imagine being brought before General Lee for having broken the rules?  And the young man was trembling.  Lee said, "You need not be afraid. You'll get justice here."  The young man said, "I know it, general. That's what I'm scared of." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | He referred to the Union Army as "those people", rather than as "the enemy."  Now "those people" had a new commander whom Lee had not tested. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “When Grant began his spring campaign of '64, he took what they called ‘the heavies,’ the heavy artillerymen, out of the forts in Washington, and put them in the field.  Many had been in the Army two or three years and never had heard a shot fired in anger.  As these units marched into camp, they were so much larger than combat regiments that soldiers alongside the road used to say, "what division is that?" There were so many of them.  They had some fierce things. The first time they'd go into combat, they'd have a mangled corpse, an artillery casualty, by the side of the road, with a blanket over him.  And as the new green regiments came abreast of them, they'd whisk the blanket off and say, "this is what's waiting for you up ahead."  Not a very pleasant story.” |  |  |  |
| Ulysses S. Grant –  Actor | "To get possession of Lee's army was the first object. With the capture of his army, Richmond would necessarily follow.  It was better to fight him outside his stronghold, than in it."  Ulysses S. Grant. |  |  |  |
| John B. Gordon –  Actor | "This advance by General Grant inaugurated the seventh act in the "on to Richmond" drama, played by the armies of the Union."  General John B. Gordon. |  |  |  |
| James Longstreet –  Actor | "That man Grant will fight us every day and every hour, til the end of the war."  General James Longstreet. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Grant's plan called for four simultaneous blows.  William Tecumseh Sherman had orders to strike out from Chattanooga for Atlanta.  Franz Sigel would advance up the Shenandoah valley.  Benjamin Butler was to lead an army up from the James River,  And George Gordon Meade was to lead the Army of the Potomac, 110,000 strong, south against Lee.  "Wherever Lee goes, you will go also," Grant told Meade.  And Grant would come along, too.  Lee's strategy was unchanged. Destroy the Union resolve to wage war.  He would refuse to fight Grant in the open, force him to attack fortified Confederate positions, and thereby offset Grant's superior numbers.  The bloody cost of trying to force the South back into the Union at gunpoint,  would bolster antiwar sentiment in the North. |  |  | 07:04:03 |
| James Longstreet –  Actor | "If we can break up the enemy's arrangements early, and throw him back, he will not be able to recover his position or morale until the presidential election is over.  And then we shall have a new president to treat with."  General James Longstreet. |  |  |  |
| Washington  Roebling –  Actor | "April 1, 1864.  The president came down to Culpeper to review the army.  The president was mounted on a fractious horse. Soon after the march began, his tall hat fell off.  His pantaloons slipped up to the knees, showing his white homemade drawers, which presently slipped up also, revealing a long, hairy leg.  While we were inclined to smile, we were very much chagrined to see our poor President compelled to endure such torture."  Washington Roebling. |  |  |  |
| Albert M.  Stewart –  Actor | "On the morning of May 4, 1864, we, with the entire Grand Army of the Potomac, were in motion toward the Rapidan.  The dawn was clear, warm, and beautiful.  As the almost countless encampments were broken up, with bands in all directions playing lively airs, banners waving, regiments, brigades, and divisions falling into line, the scene, even to eyes long familiar with military displays, was one of unusual grandeur."  Chaplain A. M. Stewart. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Lee's 60,000 men were waiting for Grant in the tangled thicket known as the Wilderness, in which they had trapped the same army under Joseph Hooker, only a year before. |  |  |  |
| Joseph  Ripley –  Actor | "Covered by a dense forest, almost impenetrable by troops in line of battle,  the undergrowth was so heavy that it was scarcely possible to see more than 100 yards in any direction.  The movements of the enemy could not be observed until the lines were almost in collision." |  |  | 07:05:55 |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Advance units of the Union Army camped for the night on the old Chancellorsville battlefield, where winter rains had washed open the shallow graves. |  |  |  |
| Herman Melville  Actor | "In glades they meet skull after skull.  Where pine cones lay-- the rusted gun.  Green shoes full of bones, the mouldering coat  And cuddled-up skeletons, and scores of such.  Some start, as in dreams, and comrades lost bemoan.  By the edge of these wilds stonewall had charged--  But the year and the man were gone." |  |  |  |
| Private  Frank  Wilkeson  Actor | "It grew dark, and we built a fire.  The dead were all around us.  Their eyeless, skulls seemed to stare steadily at us.  The trees swayed and sighed gently in the soft wind.  Private Frank Wilkeson” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The battle of the wilderness began in chaos.  Units got lost. Fired on their own comrades.  Officers tried to navigate by compass.  But on the second day, Union forces drove through the Confederate center.  As a worried Lee watched, General John Gregg's Texans hurried to plug up the hole. |  |  |  |
| General John  Gordon  Actor | "Scarce had we moved a step, when General Lee, in front of the whole command, raised himself in his stirrups, uncovered his gray hairs, and with an earnest voice exclaimed, Texans always move them." |  |  |  |
| Unknown Texas Soldier  Actor | "Never before in my lifetime did I ever see such a scene as was enacted when Lee pronounced these words.  A yell rent the air, that must have been heard for miles around.  A courier riding by my side, with tears coursing down his cheeks, exclaimed, I would charge hell itself for that old man." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The Texans held the position until reinforcements came.  By the end of the day, the Confederates had smashed Grant's right,  seized 2 generals and 600 prisoners, and had come close to cutting the Union supply line.  Grant received these reports without comment. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “Right in the middle of the battle of the wilderness, all the staff men who had been fighting in the east all this time, and he had just come from the west, kept talking about Bobby Lee.  Bobby Lee, Bobby Lee, he will do this, he will do that.  Grant finally told them, ‘I'm tired of hearing about Bobby Lee. You’d think he’d do a double somersault and land in our rear.  Quit thinking about what he'll do to you, and think about what you'll do to him. Bring some guns up here.’  Things like that. Grant, he's wonderful. |  |  |  |
| Ed Bearss - Historian | The Wilderness is probably not the bloodiest battle in the war, but the most terrible battle in the war, in many ways.  Grant in two days, loses more men, than Hooker did at Chancellorsville.  But in the Wilderness, the leaves from the previous year, cover the ground,  and using the type of weapon they used in the civil war, you have lots of lint and linen, smoldering, falling into the leaves,  And it will set these leaves afire.  And men who've been shot badly through the bowels, with broken legs, will not be able to move, as the fire starts burning toward them.  And large numbers of wounded men will perish in the flames. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Grant's first move had been a disaster.  The wilderness had cost 17,000 men.  That night brush fires raged through the woods.  200 wounded federal soldiers burned alive, while the entrenched armies listened to their screams. |  |  |  |
| Clara  Barton  Actor | "I am holding my breath in awe, at the vastness of the shadow that floats like a pall over our heads.  It is come that man has no longer an individual existence, but is counted in thousands and measured in miles."  Clara Barton” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In the Wilderness, surgeons amputated limbs without letup, for more than 100 hours.  And sent back behind the lines 2,000 wounded men each day. |  |  |  |
| Carl Schurz.  Actor | "As a wounded man was lifted on the table, often shrieking with pain as the attendants handled him, the surgeon quickly examined the wound and resolved upon cutting off the wounded limb.  Some ether was administered.  The surgeon snatched his knife from between his teeth, wiped it rapidly once or twice across his bloodstained apron, and the cutting began.  The operation accomplished, the surgeon would look around, with a deep sigh, and then, Next.  Carl Schurz” |  |  |  |
| Washington  Roebling –  Actor | "The Wilderness was a useless battle.  Fought with great loss and no result."  Washington Roebling. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “Grant, in the Wilderness, after that first night in the Wilderness, went to his tent and broke down and cried, very hard.  Some staff members said they'd never seen a man so unstrung.  But he didn't cry until the battle was over, and he wasn't crying when it began again next day.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | What was different about Grant became clear the next morning, when he gave the order to march.  For the first time after a defeat, the Army of the Potomac was moving forward. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes  Actor | "May 7.  If we were under any other general except Grant, I should expect a retreat.  But Grant is not that kind of soldier.  Elisha Hunt Rhodes” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | "Our spirits rose," one union man remembered, "we marched free.  The men began to sing.  "Ulysses," another soldier said, "don't scare worth a damn." |  |  |  |
| Robert E. Lee  Actor | "General Grant is not going to retreat.  He will move his army to Spotsylvania.  I'm so sure of his next move, that I have already made arrangements." |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “He knew what Grant was going to do, because he could make himself Grant, for long enough to figure out what Grant would do in a situation.  When they fired five or six generals, before they got to Grant, and by the time they let McClellan go, Lee said, ‘I'm afraid they'll keep making these changes until they get someone I don't understand.’  They never got anyone he didn't understand, but they finally got Grant.  Who knew how to whip him and did.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In the first years of the war, battle was bloody, but sporadic.  From now on, it would be waged without a break.  From the Wilderness to Cold Harbor, it would not stop for 30 days.  It was, one soldier wrote, "living night and day, within the valley of the shadow of death." |  |  |  |
| Mary Chesnut  Actor | "May 8.  The dreadful work is beginning again.  John L. Miller, my cousin, killed at the head of his regiment.  The blows now fall so fast on our heads, it is bewildering.  Mary Chesnut.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | At Spotsylvania, the two armies mauled each other for days without gaining ground.  It was the most relentless exchange of fire, in the history of warfare, up to that time. Some men were hit by so many bullets, that their bodies fell apart.  A Union veteran remembered it simply as "the most terrible day I have ever lived." |  |  |  |
| General Horace Porter  Actor | "The enemy's dead were piled upon each other in front of the captured breastworks, in some places four layers deep.  Below the mass of fast-decaying corpses, the convulsive twitching of limbs showed that there were wounded men still alive.  The place was well named the bloody angle." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The two armies lost another 20,000 men. |  |  |  |
| Unknown Confederate Soldier  Actor | "May 12th, Yellow Tavern, Virginia.  General Jeb Stuart, killed." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | When Lee got the news, he said, “I can scarcely think of him without weeping."  Again and again, Lee anticipated Grant, and again and again, the Union commander skirted south and east in a semicircle.  The two armies locked in a brutal, clumsy stranglehold, as the battle lines lurched toward Richmond. |  |  |  |
| Robert E.  Lee  Actor | "We must destroy this army of Grant's before he gets to the James.  If he gets there, it will become a siege.  Then it will be a mere question of time." |  |  |  |
| Ulysses S.  Grant  Actor | "May 11th.  We have now ended the sixth day of very heavy fighting, and the result up to this time is much in our favor.  I propose to fight it out on this line, if it takes all summer." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Grant continued his stubborn flanking maneuvers, in an attempt to get around Lee's right, and move on Richmond. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “He did it with superior numbers and doggedness.  Kept going.  Move by the left flank. move by the left flank, move by the left flank  Lee's backing up the whole time, losing men that he couldn't replace. |  |  |  |
| Washington Roebling  Actor | "May 15, 1864.  Dear Emily:  The papers must have told you that we have been fighting a little.  Our corps has only 12,000 left out of 27,000.  Uncle Robert E. Lee isn't licked yet by a long shot, and if we are not mighty careful, he'll beat us.  I think we have done very well to avoid that fate so far.  Tomorrow we have another battle. I don't think it will amount to much."  Washington Roebling. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Grant and Lee now raced for a crossroads called Cold Harbor, near the Chickahominy river.  Lee got there first and ordered his men to dig in, and prepare for the all-out assault he knew would follow.  As they settled down for the night on June 2nd, veterans on the Union side sensed what was coming. |  |  |  |
| General Horace Porter  Actor | "The men were calmly writing their names and home addresses on slips of paper, and pinning them to the backs of their coats, so that their bodies might be recognized, and their fate made known to their families at home."  General Horace Porter. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | When the bugles blew for the attack at 4:30 a.m., 60,000 Union men started toward the unseen enemy.  The battle of Cold Harbor had begun. |  |  |  |
| General Evander Law  Actor | "I had seen the dreadful carnage in front of Marye's hill at Fredericksburg,  but I had seen nothing to exceed this.  It was not war. It was murder." |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “Those were men who knew how to take a position where you could do the most killing from. That whole army was lined up, praying something would come at them.  Grant threw three corps at them.  In approximately 7 minutes, they shot about 7,000 men down. It was a bloody mess.  It's the only thing Grant ever admitted that he'd done wrong. |  |  |  |
| Ulysses S.  Grant  Actor | "I've always regretted that the last assault at Cold Harbor was ever made.  No advantage whatever was gained to compensate for the heavy loss we sustained." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | When another assault was suggested, Union officers rejected the idea outright.  "i will not take my regiment in another such charge," said a New Hampshire Captain, "if Jesus Christ himself should order it."  After the battle, the diary of a young Massachusetts volunteer was found spattered with blood.  Its last entry read, "June 3, 1864, Cold Harbor, Virginia. I was killed." |  |  |  |
| Washington Roebling  Actor | "Our matters here are at a deadlock.  Unless the Rebs commit some great error, they will hold us in check until kingdom come.  We are thoroughly tired and disgusted.  These two armies remind me of two school boys, trying to stare each other out of countenance.  Everyone knows if Lee were to come out of his entrenchments, we could whip him, but Bob Lee is a little too smart for us.  Washington Roebling” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | From the Wilderness to Cold Harbor, in a single month, the Army of the Potomac had lost 50,000 men.  Half as many as in three years of struggle. |  |  |  |
| Unknown Union Soldier  Actor | “June 5, 1864.  Our people lost very severely yesterday.  In every calculation that we make, we make ourselves out to be 20,000 men stronger.  Yet in every fight, they show as many men as we have, and they always show as long a line as we do no matter how long we make ours.” |  |  |  |
| Unknown Union Soldier  Actor | "June 7, 1864.  Another one of my best army friends has been killed.  One goes after the other with perfect regularity.” |  |  |  |
| Mary  Chesnut  Actor | Grant doesn't care a snap if men fall like the leaves fall. He fights to win, that chap does.  He has the disagreeable habit of not retreating before irresistible veterans.  Mary Chesnut” |  |  |  |
| General George  Meade  Actor | "He keeps his own counsel, padlocks his mouth, while his countenance indicates nothing, that is, gives no expression of his feelings, and no evidence of his intentions.  He smokes almost constantly, and has a habit of whittling with a small knife, cutting a small stick into small chips, making nothing." |  |  |  |
| Mary Todd  Lincoln  Actor | "Grant is a butcher, and not fit to be at the head of an army.  He loses two men to the enemy's one. He has no management, no regard for life.  I could fight an army as well myself.  Mary Lincoln” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | When several of Lee's officers denounced grant as a butcher, Lee quieted them.  "I think Grant has managed his affairs remarkably well up to the present time," he said.  Grant kept moving.  He slipped his army out of his trenches, crossed the Chickahominy, feinted toward Richmond, then shifted left again, to the James river.  His target now was Petersburg, south of the Confederate capital, where he hoped to cut off Lee's supplies, and destroy the Army of Northern Virginia.  For the first time, Lee misjudged Grant's intentions, rushing much of his army to the outskirts of Richmond, to meet an attack Grant did not plan to make.  Instead, Union engineers laid a pontoon bridge all the way across the James in just eight hours.  On June 12th, the massive Army of the Potomac began to cross.  It took four days. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln  Actor | "General Grant:  I begin to see it. You will succeed.  God Bless You.  A. Lincoln." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | 16,000 Union troops under General William Smith were the first to reach Petersburg.  The city was defended by fewer than 3,000 Confederates under General Beauregard.  Smith moved slowly to the attack.  Reinforcements, intended to aid him, got lost on the way.  Still, his late-afternoon assault made progress.  When night fell, Petersburg seemed within the Union's grasp.  General Winfield Scott Hancock urged a moonlight assault, but Smith begged off, remembering Cold Harbor.  During the night, Confederate reinforcements were brought up.  The opportunity was gone. |  |  |  |
| Ulysses S.  Grant  Actor | "The rage of the enlisted men was devilish. The most bloodcurdling blasphemy I ever listened to I heard that night." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In six weeks, Grant and Lee had all but crippled each other, and now both armies dug in for a siege.  The burrowing would go on for 10 months.  The men lived in a 20-mile labyrinth of trenches, plagued by flies, open to rain and the fierce Virginia sun, and exposed to shell and mortar fire. |  |  |  |
| John W.  Haley  Actor | "Nothing for excitement except that a few were picked off by sharpshooters.  A feeling prevails that sooner or later this experience will befall us all.  Private John W. Haley” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Colonel Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain, one of the heroes of Gettysburg, led his regiment in an assault on Petersburg.  As he turned to rally his men, a bullet smashed through his pelvis, severed arteries, nicked his bladder.  He stayed on his feet, leaning on his sword with one hand, waiving his men on with the other, until they had all passed him by.  Then he sank to the ground.  Doctors did not expect him to live.  In tribute to his courage, Grant promoted him on the field to brigadier general.  Chamberlain's obituary appeared in the newspapers the next day. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “Petersburg is a magnificent salute to the durability of men on both sides.  It was just a rehearsal for World War I trench warfare.  And they stood up very well to it. But the soldiers always did in that war.  It's, to us, an almost incredible bravery, considering the casualties |  |  |  |
| Washington Roebling  Actor | "June 23, 1864  The demand down here for killing purposes is far ahead of the supply.  Thank God however for the consolation that when the last man is killed, the war will be over.  This war differs from all previous wars in having no object to fight for.  It can't be finished until all the men on either the one side or the other are killed.  Both sides are trying to do that as fast as they can because it would be a pity to spin this affair out for two or three years longer.  Washington Roebling” |  |  |  |
| Mollie Vanderberg  Actor | "Dear Henry  I feel more lonely and sad than I have been in some time. Oh, that I knew what the termination of this awful conflict would be.  Henry, I want to see you, but don't you come.  Join for the war if 'tis 40 years.  If you get killed, 'tis the most honorable death. If you escape, I will rejoice.  I love thee still.  Mollie Vanderberg” |  |  |  |
| Horace Greeley  Actor | "Our bleeding, bankrupt, almost dying, country longs for peace, shudders at the prospect of further wholesale devastation, of new rivers of human blood.  Horace Greeley” |  |  |  |
| Alexander Hunter  Actor | "At night, my ward became like the dim caverns of the catacombs, where, instead of the dead in their final rest, there were wasted figures burning with fever, and raving from the agony of splintered bones, tossing restlessly from side to side with every ill, it seemed, which human flesh was heir to.  From the rafters, the flickering oil lamp swung mournfully, casting a ghastly light."  Private Alexander Hunter, 17th Virginia. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | When the war began, there were only a handful of army hospitals in the North.  When it ended, the Union was running more than 350, the confederacy, 154.  There were 16 hospitals in Washington alone.  When these proved insufficient, men were cared for in the patent office, even in the house and senate chambers.  Hospitals were giant warehouses for the dying.  The biggest and best, North or South, was Chimborazo at Richmond, with 8,000 beds, five soup kitchens, icehouses, dairy cattle, a herd of goats, a bakery that turned out 10,000 loaves of bread a day, and a 400-keg brewery. |  |  |  |
| Walt  Whitman  Actor | "Aroused and angry, I'd thought to beat the alarm, and urge relentless war.  But soon my fingers failed me, my face drooped and I resigned myself to sit by the wounded and soothe them, or silently watch the dead.  Walt Whitman” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Walt Whitman was too old for the ranks, not qualified to be an officer, not enthusiastic about "firing a gun or drawing a sword on another man,"  But when his younger brother was wounded at Antietam, and Whitman went to find him in the hospital, he was appalled by what he saw.  He moved to Washington to help with the wounded,  Giving out small gifts, changing dressings, and reciting his poetry. |  |  |  |
| Walt  Whitman  Actor | "The doctors tell me I supply the patients with a medicine which all their drugs and bottles and powders are helpless to yield.  It has saved more than one life, so, I go around.  Some of my boys die. Some get well." |  |  |  |
| Dorothea  Dix  Actor | "No woman under 30 years need apply to serve in government hospitals.  All nurses are required to be very plain-looking women.  Their dresses must be brown or black, with no bows, no curls, no jewelry, and no hoop skirts.  Dorothea Dix” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Early in the war, Dorothea Dix volunteered her services to the Union.  The 59-year-old crusader for the mentally ill was put in charge of all women nurses employed by the armies.  Tireless, and so autocratic one woman called her "Dragon Dix," she barred any applicant she thought interested in romantic adventure.  Even nuns were sometimes turned down.  By the end of the war, though, the only question she asked potential recruits was "when can you start?"  Under her strict guidance, care for the sick and wounded was vastly improved.  Despite the bitter criticism, and petty rivalry of male colleagues, she stayed at her post for all four years, the entire war, without pay. |  |  |  |
| Harriet Foote Hawley  Actor | "Armory square hospital.  I am learning not to let myself feel as much as I did at first.  Yet I never can get used to it.  Harriet Foote Hawley” |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | "They would see that the doctor gave them up and would ask me about it.  I told them the truth.  I told one man that. He asked, how long? I said, not over 20 minutes.  He did not show any fear. They never do.  He put his hand up, and closed his eyes with his own fingers, and stretched himself out, and crossed his arms over his breast.  Now, fix me, he said.  I pinned the toes of his stockings together. That was the way we laid corpses out.  And he died in minutes. His face looked pleasant, as if he was asleep.  And many is the time the boys would fix themselves that way before they died. |  |  |  |
| Walt  Whitman  Actor | "Lorenzo Strong, Company A, 9th United States Cavalry. Shot by a shell last Sunday, right leg amputated on the field. Took a turn for the worse. I stayed and saw all.  The doctor comes and gives him a little chloroform. One of the nurses constantly fans him, for it is fearfully hot.  He asks to be raised up, and they put him in a half-sitting posture. He called for “Mark” repeatedly, half deliriously, all day.  Life ebbs, runs now with the speed of a millrace.  His eyes turned back. A crowd, including two or three doctors, several students, and many soldiers, has silently gathered.  The struggle goes on and dwindles, a little more and a little more, and then welcome oblivion, painlessness, death. A pause. The crowd drops away." |  |  |  |
| Walt  Whitman  Actor | "June 17, 1864.  Dearest Mother.  This place seems to have got the better of me. I think I shall come home for a short time.” |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman  Actor | "I think I understand the purpose of the South properly.  The best way to deal with them is to meet them fair and square on any issue.  We must fight them, cut into them, not talk to them, and pursue til they cry enough.  War is the remedy our enemies have chosen, and I say let us give them all they want.  William Tecumseh Sherman” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | On the same day that Grant stepped off into the Wilderness, Sherman's Grand army of the West moved south from Chattanooga towards Atlanta, 100 miles away.  William Tecumseh Sherman and Ulysses S. Grant had survived hard times together.  Their friendship had been forged in Kentucky, when Sherman came close to breaking down, persuaded the war would never end. |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman  Actor | "Grant stood by me when I was crazy.  And I stood by him when he was drunk.  And now we stand by each other always." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Sherman was an orphan, and had graduated sixth in his class at West Point, when he was only 20.  Tall, red-haired, intelligent, and irritable, he wore shoes rather than military boots, slept little, and talked a lot.  "Boiling over with ideas," a friend said. |  |  |  |
| James Fowler Rusling  Actor | "He was always too busy to eat much.  He talked and smoked cigars incessantly, giving orders, dictating telegrams, bright and chipper." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | He hated politicians, profiteers, sentimentalists.  Above all, he hated reporters, whom he considered worse than spies, because they printed military secrets, just to sell newspapers. |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman  Actor | "These dirty newspaper scribblers have the impudence of satan.  They come into camp, poke about among the lazy shirks, pick up camp rumors, and publish them as facts.  They are a pest, and I treat them as spies, which, in truth, they are." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | He was convinced if he killed them all, there would be news from hell before breakfast.  Family and friends called him "Cump." His men called him "Uncle Billy."  He was ruthless in war.  Now Grant entrusted his friend with the second most important part of his grand strategy.  To seize Atlanta, and smash the combined Confederate armies of Tennessee and Mississippi, under Joseph E. Johnston.  In Washington, Lincoln's chances for re-election were slim. "I'm going to be beaten," Lincoln wrote that summer, “and unless some great change takes place, badly beaten."  With Grant stalled at Petersburg, Sherman had to win.  Sherman had surveyed parts of Georgia as a young lieutenant.  "I knew Georgia better than the rebels did," he wrote.  He knew fighting there would be scattered and sporadic, "a big Indian war," he called it.  Joseph E. Johnston, the Confederate commander who now faced Sherman, was heartily disliked by President Jefferson Davis. But he was very nearly worshiped by his men. |  |  |  |
| Sam  Watkins  Actor | "I do not believe there was a soldier in his army but would gladly have died for him.  With him, everything was his soldiers. He would feed his soldiers if the country starved.  Sam Watkins” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Outgunned, outsupplied, and outnumbered almost two to one, Joseph Johnston could only hope to slow Sherman's advance.  And perhaps lure him into making the kind of doomed frontal attack that would help swing the election against Lincoln.  But Sherman's advance was a masterpiece of planning.  In a matter of hours, his engineers replaced burned bridges and repaired ripped up rail lines.  When Nathan Bedford Forrest's raiders collapsed a tunnel in Sherman's rear, one weary Southern Private was not impressed.  "Sherman," he said, "probably carried a spare tunnel with him."  Slowly, relentlessly, he forced Johnston out of Dalton... Resaca... Cassville... Allatoona... New Hope Church.  A surrendering Confederate told his captors, "Sherman will never go to hell. He'll flank the devil, and make heaven in spite of the guards." |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman  Actor | "June 14th.  We killed General Polk yesterday, and made good progress today.  William Tecumseh Sherman” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | At Kennesaw Mountain, north of Atlanta, the Confederates dug in.  On June 27th, 13,000 Union men stormed up the mountain, and were hurled back.  The Federals "seemed to walk up and take death," a Southerner remembered, "as coolly as if they were automatic or wooden men." |  |  |  |
| Sam  Watkins  Actor | "i've heard men say that if they killed a Yankee during the war, they were unaware of it.  I'm satisfied that on this memorable day, every man in our regiment killed from 20 to 100 each.  All that was necessary was to load and shoot." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The Union lost 3,000 men, the Confederates only 750.  "One or two more such assaults," an aide warned Sherman, "would use up this army."  Sherman never admitted he had made a mistake at Kennesaw mountain, but he never repeated it either.  Reluctantly, he returned to his slow flanking maneuvers, forcing Johnston back to within sight of Atlanta itself.  But there, he stalled, just like Grant.  Two months of relentless fighting had resulted in identical stalemates.  Sherman was stopped north of Atlanta.  Grant and Lee were deadlocked outside Petersburg.  Without a decisive victory somewhere, Abraham Lincoln was sure to lose the fall election.  Time was running out. |  |  |  |
| Spotswood Rice  Actor | "Miss Kitty Diggs,  I want you to understand that Mary is my child, and she is a God-given right of my own.  And you may hold on to her as long as you can, but I want you to remember this one thing, the longer you keep my child from me, the longer you will have to burn in hell, and the quicker you'll get there.  I have no fears about getting Mary out of your hands.  This whole government gives cheer to me, and you cannot help yourself.  Spotswood Rice” |  |  |  |
| **Chapter / Episode 7 – Most Hallowed Ground: 1864** | | | | |
| Nathan Bedford Forrest  Actor | "I require able-bodied men with good horse and gun.  I wish none but those who desire to be actively engaged.  Come on, boys, if you want a heap of fun, and to kill some Yankees."  Nathan Bedford Forrest. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “Bedford Forrest's granddaughter lived here in Memphis.  She recently died.  And I got to know her.  And she even let me swing the General's Saber around my head once, which was a great treat.  And I had thought a long time, and I called her and said, ‘I think the war produced two authentic geniuses. One of them was your grandfather, and the other was Abraham Lincoln.’  And there was a silence at the other end of the phone, and she said, ‘Well, you know, in our family, we never thought much of Mr. Lincoln.’  She didn't like my coupling her grandfather with Abraham Lincoln, all these years later.  Southerners are very strange about that war.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | There was fighting all across the country.  At the Sabine crossroads near the Texas-Louisiana border.  And down the Red River.  On the Little Blue in Missouri.  At Poison Spring and Jenkins Ferry in Arkansas.  And far out in Indian Territory.  By the summer of 1864, the Union initiative had ground to a halt.  Despite its powerful industrial machine, despite increasing hardships for the South, the North was losing control of the war.  As the casualty lists grew longer, opposition to the war increased.  With the presidential campaign looming, Abraham Lincoln now knew he would have to do something, that had never been done before. Submit to a popular election during Civil War, and win it.  "The struggle within and without," an advisor told Lincoln, "is for our national existence."  At Petersburg, Robert E. Lee's entrenched army continued to resist Ulysses S. Grant's two-month-old siege.  To end the stalemate, Union troops were digging deep beneath the Confederate lines.  North of Atlanta, William Tecumseh Sherman would have to blast through an impenetrable system of trenches, breastworks, and parapets, to take the city, if he ever got there.  That summer, in the sweltering Mississippi heat, Confederate General Nathan Bedford Forrest, would cement his reputation as the most terrifying cavalry commander of the war.  Meanwhile, in the Shenandoah Valley, a diminutive Union General, Phil Sheridan, would gleefully wreck every farm and village he could lay his hands on.  While in Richmond, Jefferson Davis struggled desperately, to keep the idea of the Confederacy alive.  At the end of the year, Union Quartermaster General Montgomery Meigs would lose a son, and bring his grief to the doorstep of Robert E. Lee.  By the summer of 1864, people could hardly remember, that there had ever been a time without war. And many, did not believe it would ever end. |  |  |  |
| Henry Raymond  Actor | "Dear Mr. President,  The tide is setting strongly against us. Two special causes are assigned to this great reaction in public sentiment. The want of military success at Petersburg and Atlanta, and the impression that we are fighting, not for Union, but for the abolition of slavery.  Henry Raymond,  Chairman, Republican National Committee.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The siege of Petersburg went on.  Morale had never been lower.  "We should never have wars like this again," one Union soldier said.  In less than 6 months, from the Wilderness to Spotsylvania, Cold Harbor to Petersburg, Grant had nearly destroyed his army.  "The people are wild for peace," a newspaper reported, "Lincoln's re-election is an impossibility."  Nevertheless, 140,000 soldiers re-enlisted in the Union Army.  Pride and patriotism had much to do with it, and a desire to see the thing through.  But so did the promise of a month's furlough.  "3 more years of hell," wrote one soldier, in exchange for 30 days of heaven, home." |  |  |  |
| Harper's Weekly  Reader | Harper's Weekly.  "The political campaign, which ends in the election of the 8th of November,  decides the most important question in history.  It has always been the fate of republics to be destroyed by faction.  That fear is now about to be confirmed, or dissipated forever." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The key, everyone knew, was Atlanta.  If Sherman could reach the railroad hub of the South, the war might end at last.  But, it was the stalemate in Virginia, that concerned Lincoln now. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes  Actor | "July 4, 1864.  The Glorious Fourth has come again, and we have had quite a celebration.  We’ve done firing shot and shell into Petersburg to remind them of the day.  This day makes four fourth of Julys that I have passed in the army.  The first at Camp Clark, the second at Harrison's Landing, the third at Gettysburg, and today at Petersburg.  I had a party of officers to dine with me. This was our bill of fare: stewed oysters, canned, roast turkey, canned, bread pudding, tapioca pudding, apple pie, made in camp, lemonade, cigars.  Tomorrow, if we march, hardtack and salt pork will be our fare.  Elisha Hunt Rhodes” |  |  |  |
| Harry Hammond  Actor | "The enemy throw a number of shells daily into Petersburg, but they do little damage.  The women and children seem not to mind them at all.  On one street yesterday, where such a number of shells burst, that I would have considered it a warm place in the field.  Women were passing about with little concern, dodging around the corner, when they heard a shell coming, or putting their heads out of their windows, to see what damage they had done.  A lady yesterday sent Wardlaw and myself some ice cream and cakes.  Harry Hammond” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | To relieve the pressure on Petersburg, Lee sent 10,000 men north, to push Union troops out of the Shenandoah, and harass Washington itself.  In charge of the Southern forces was a ruthless confederate general, named Jubal Early.  Early attacked Fort Stevens, on the outskirts of Washington, terrifying the city, despite the 74 forts, that now made it the most heavily fortified city on earth.  Federal troops, including Elisha Hunt Rhodes, were hastily brought up from Petersburg to protect the capital. |  |  |  |
| Elisha Hunt Rhodes  Actor | "July 12, 1864  We marched in line of battle into a peach orchard, in front of Fort Stevens.  And here the fight began.  For a short time it was warm work. But as the President, and many ladies, were looking at us, every man tried to do his best.  Without our help, the small force in the forts would have been overpowered.  Jubal Early should have attacked early in the morning. But Early was late." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Meanwhile, to stop William Tecumseh Sherman's advance on Atlanta, Nathan Bedford Forrest was also on the move. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | You're asking about the most man in the world, in some ways.  Forrest was a natural genius.  Someone said that he was born to be a soldier, the way John Keats was born to be a poet.  He had some basic principles, that, when you translate them, they fit right into the army manual. When he said, "get there first with the most men," he's saying, "take the interior lines and bring superior force to bear."  He had some very simple things. He used to say, "hit them on the end", and he used to say, "keep up the scare."  And these are all good military principles, expressed in Forrest's own way.  And he was able to look at a piece of ground, and see how to use it. He had a marvelous sense of topography. He could see the key to a position, and know where to hit. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | “Forrest”, William Tecumseh Sherman later said, "was the most remarkable man our Civil War produced, on either side."  He was the son of an illiterate blacksmith. He made himself a millionaire, selling land, cotton and slaves  In 1861, he enlisted as a private, then quit to raise and equip an entire cavalry battalion out of his own pocket.  By the end of the war, he had become lieutenant general, the only man on either side to rise so far.  He was the most feared cavalry commander of the war. The "wizard of the saddle," wounded 4 times in battle, and famous for having horses shot out from under him. |  |  |  |
| Edward  Bearss –  Historian | “Old Bedford Forrest, he's the most colorful man in the war.  He killed more men than any other general officer ever has.  Had more horses shot out from under him, than any other officer ever had.” |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “He had 30 horses shot from under him in the course of the war, and he killed 31 men in hand-to-hand combat.  He said, ‘I was a horse ahead at the end.’" |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | He was a master of the lightning raid, and an expert at winning against long odds.  He fought his battles, he said, "by ear," and he could anticipate an enemy's movements with uncanny precision. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “He was only surprised in battle once.  It was a place called Parker's Crossroads up in Tennessee. He was on a raid.  And he was closing in on an opponent, and fixing to finish him off, when he was attacked in the rear by a force that he did not suspect was within many miles.  And everybody was terribly upset, and said, ‘general, what shall we do?’  And he said, ‘split in two, and charge both ways.’ And did, and got out. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In June 1864, in an attempt to cut off Sherman's supplies, at Brice's Crossroads, near Tupelo, Mississippi, Forrest outdid even himself.  The Union army coming to stop him was nearly three times as strong as his, but Forrest was unimpressed.  Factoring in the mud-clogged roads, and the blazing mid-June sun, he predicted the Union Cavalry would arrive well ahead of the Union Infantry, giving him time to whip it on his own terms.  It all happened exactly as he said.  No army, it seemed, could stop him.  Forrest was free to slash at Sherman's forces, slowing his approach to Atlanta. |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman  Actor | "Forrest must be hunted down and killed if it cost 10,000 lives, and bankrupts that federal treasury.  William Tecumseh Sherman” |  |  |  |
| New York World  Reader | "Who shall revive the withered hopes that bloomed at the opening of Grant's campaign?  All are tired of this damnable tragedy.  Each hour is but sinking us deeper into bankruptcy and desolation.  New York World” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The summer of 1864 was the North's darkest hour.  Grant's losses had been appalling.  His army was stalled in front of Petersburg. His grand strategy apparently come to nothing.  Franz Sigel's army had been routed in the Shenandoah. Ben Butler was bottled up in a loop of the James River, called the Bermuda Hundred.  Even William Tecumseh Sherman was stalled outside Atlanta. |  |  |  |
| Horace Greeley  Actor | "Mr. Lincoln is already beaten. He cannot be re-elected. And we must have another ticket.  Horace Greeley” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | No nation had ever held an election In the midst of a civil war.  No president since Andrew Jackson had won a second term.  Long after Lincoln was nominated, politicians in his own party still hoped to reconvene and pick another nominee.  Even Lincoln believed his re-election unlikely. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln  Actor | "We cannot have free government without elections. And if the rebellion could force us to forego or postpone a national election, it might fairly be claimed to have already conquered and ruined us.  Abraham Lincoln” |  |  |  |
| Democratic National Platform  Reader | "After 4 years of failure to restore the Union by the experiment of war, we demand that immediate effort be made for a cessation of hostilities, at the earliest practicable moment.  Democratic National Platform” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The Democrats wanted an end to the war, with or without victory.  Their nominee was General George McClellan, whose ambition had not shrunk since Lincoln removed him from command. |  |  |  |
| Thomas Gerish  Actor | "McClellan was our first commander, and as such, he was almost worshipped by his soldiers.  The political friends of General McClellan well understood that fact, and it was a very crafty thing for them to nominate him as their candidate for the presidency." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | The South rejoiced at McClellan's nomination.  "The first ray of real light," Vice-President Alexander Stephens said, "since the war began."  Wherever it could, the South exploited antiwar feeling in the North.  The Confederate Government sent money to support the Union Peace Movement, and painted Lincoln as the candidate of war.  The campaign was ugly. Democrats charged that the real goal of Old Abe's war, was miscegenation, a new word for the "blending of white and black."  Republicans charged Democrats with treason.  The 1864 presidential election had become a referendum on the war itself. |  |  |  |
| Stephen Oates  - Historian | All the word from all Republicans, even on the most local level, indicated that Lincoln couldn't possibly win.  The fortunes of war had turned too badly, too sour, for the Union.  At one really poignant moment, Lincoln sat in the privacy of his office, contemplating the fact that he probably wasn't going to be re-elected, and that McClellan, of all people, would replace him as President. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln  Actor | "This morning, as for some days past, it seems exceedingly probable, that this administration will not be re-elected.  Then it will be my duty to so cooperate with the President-Elect, as to save the Union, between the election and the inauguration.  As he will have secured his election on such grounds, that he cannot possibly, save it afterward." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Pressured to drop emancipation as a condition of peace with the South, Lincoln refused.  "The proclamation had promised freedom," Lincoln said, "and the promise being made, must be kept.” |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln  Actor | I should be damned in time and in eternity, if I were to return to slavery the black warriors who have fought for the Union.” |  |  |  |
| Matthew Brady  Actor | "Spy Johnson, shot near coffin." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Even before Bull Run, stolen secrets and intricate codes, streamed between Washington and Richmond.  Allan Pinkerton ran the Northern Secret Service, while Confederate Major, William Norris had a spy network that extended as far north as Montreal.  In 1864, several Southern Agents even invaded Vermont.  Spies were everywhere. |  |  |  |
| Mary  Chesnut  Actor | "Women who come before the public are in a bad box now.  All manner of things they say, come over the border, under the huge hoops now worn, so they are ruthlessly torn off.  Not legs, but arms, are looked for, under hoops, and, sad to say, found.  Mary Chesnut” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Rose O'Neal Greenhow, a Washington widow, ran a Confederate spy ring, just a few blocks from the White House.  Much of her information came from an infatuated suitor, Senator Henry Wilson, Chairman of the Military Affairs Committee.  Imprisonment failed to stop Belle Boyd from coaxing secrets out of Union officers in Washington, and passing them on in code to Richmond, inside rubber balls, that she tossed from her cell window to a shadowy agent she knew only as "C.H."  Her admirers called her "La Belle Rebelle."  Slaves and former slaves made especially good Union operatives, guiding Northern troops through swamps and forests, and reporting on their masters.  "After all," one Union officer said, "they had been spies all their lives."  One Northern agent, a black servant named Mary Elizabeth Bowser, even worked inside the Confederate White House.  In November of 1863, a Southern courier, Sam Davis, was sentenced to death at Pulaski, Tennessee, for spying. On the scaffold, Davis' bravery proved so moving, that the commanding general was unable to give the order of execution. Davis finally gave it himself. |  |  |  |
| Charles Wainwright  Actor | "July 21st, Thursday, in front of Petersburg.  The mine which General Burnside is making causes a good deal of talk and is generally much laughed at.  It is an affair of his own entirely and has nothing to do with the regular siege." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | For a month, a regiment of Pennsylvania coal miners worked to dig a 500 foot tunnel, beneath the Confederate lines, and pack it with four tons of gunpowder.  Burnside's idea was to blow a hole in the Petersburg defenses, then rush through to take the town.  Above ground, not far from the tunnel, the unsuspecting Confederate Commander was General William Mahone, a veteran of almost every major battle fought by the Army of Northern Virginia.  At dawn on July 30, Union sappers lit the fuse.  A great crater was torn in the earth, 30 feet deep, 70 feet wide, 250 feet long.  The stunned Confederates fell back.  Then the plan began to fall apart.  A precious hour went by before the Union assault force got started, and when it did, three divisions stormed down into the great hole, rather than around it.  Their commander, General James H. Ledlie, did not even watch the battle,  huddling instead, in a bombproof shelter, with a bottle of rum.  Once inside the crater, the Union Soldiers found there was no way up the sheer 30-foot wall of the pit, and no one had thought to provide ladders.  General Mahone ordered his men back to the rim, to pour fire down upon them.  Scores of black troops were killed when they tried to surrender at the crater, bayoneted or clubbed by Confederates shouting, "take the white man, kill the nigger!" |  |  |  |
| Ulysses S. Grant  Actor | "It was the saddest affair I have ever witnessed in the war.  Such opportunity for carrying fortifications I have never seen and do not expect again to have.  Ulysses S. Grant” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | General Ledlie was dismissed from the service.  Burnside was granted extended leave and never recalled to duty. |  |  |  |
| Washington Roebling  Actor | "July 30, 1864  The work and expectations of almost two months have been blasted.  The first temporary success had elated everyone so much that we already had imagined ourselves in Petersburg.  But 15 minutes changed it all, and plunged everyone into a feeling of despair, almost of ever accomplishing anything.  Few officers can be found this evening who have not drowned their sorrows in the flowing bowl.  Washington Roebling” |  |  |  |
| Robert  Ely  Actor | "The day has been so excessively hot that I am almost melted.  The thermometer in the wardroom stands at 90 degrees, while on deck the weather is very pleasant, a fair breeze blowing from the east.  Everything is dirty, everything smells bad, everybody is demoralized.  How are you, ironclad?  A man who would stay in an ironclad from choice, is a candidate for the insane asylum, and he who stays from compulsion, is an object of pity.  Fresh leaks are breaking out every day.  Robert B. Ely” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | For two full years now, Union troops had occupied Fort Pulaski, at the entrance to Savannah Harbor, blocking Confederate supplies, and waiting patiently for a Union army to come and seize the city itself.  To fill the time, the men played baseball, fast becoming the national pastime, South as well as North.  But 300 miles away, Sherman was stuck in the hills of north Georgia.  "The enemy must have at least 50 miles of connected trenches," he wrote, “the whole country is one vast Fort.” |  |  |  |
| Albinus Fell  Actor | “I think the damned old cuss of a preacher lied like Dixie, for he said that God has fought all our battles and won our victories.  Now, if he had done all that, why is it not in the papers, and why has he not been promoted?  Sergeant Albinus Fell” |  |  |  |
| Orville Bumpass  Actor | "Is it possible that God will bless a people as wicked as our soldier?  I fear not.  One unceasing tide of blasphemy and wickedness, coarseness and obscenity.  Orville C. Bumpass” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Men bet on anything.  Boxing matches, horse races, baseball games, and cockfights.  In Union camps, victorious birds named "Grant" and "Bill Sherman" fought losers called "Beauregard," "Jeff Davis," and "Bob Lee." |  |  |  |
| Sam Watkins  Actor | "The boys would frequently have a louse race.  The lice were placed in plates, and the first that crawled off was the winner.  There was one fellow named Dornin, who was winning all the money.  We could not understand it. If a fellow happened to catch a fierce-looking louse, he would call on Dornin for a race.  Dornin would come and always win the stake.  At last we found out Dornin's trick. He always heated the plate.  Sam Watkins” |  |  |  |
| Edward’s  Mother  Actor | "Rutland, Vermont  Dear Edward  It will be hard to have all my sons go, but if it is right, I've nothing to say.  As you value your good name, your peace of mind, and happiness here and hereafter, do keep aloof from card playing. For imperceptibly you will be led, I fear, to gambling.  Your Devoted Mother" |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | There were in all 450 brothels in Washington, D.C.  Known to steady customers as "Fort Sumter," "Madame Russell's Bake Oven," and "Headquarters, USA."  Men called a trip there "going down the line.” |  |  |  |
| Private Eli Veazie  Actor | "I had a good time in Washington. Lager beer and a horse and buggy, and in the evening, horizontal refreshments.  Or in plainer words, riding a Dutch Gal.  Had a good time generally, I tell you.  Private Eli Veazie” |  |  |  |
| James F. Jones  Actor | "In the City of New Orleans, we could see signs of smothered hate and prejudice to both our color and present character as Union soldiers.  But for once in his life, your humble correspondent walked fearlessly and boldly through the streets of a Southern city.  And he did this without being required to take off his cap at every step or to give all the sidewalks to those lordly princes of the sunny South, the planters' sons.  Oh, chivalry, how hast thou lost thy potent power and charms?  By what means, pray tell me, hast thou so degenerated as to lose the respect and admiration even of the sable sons of Africa." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | That summer, Congress finally passed legislation giving black soldiers equal pay with whites.  On August 5, 1864, Union Admiral David Farragut led 18 ships storming past three forts to engage the Confederate fleet guarding Mobile bay.  Farragut suffered from vertigo so intense, he ordered himself lashed to the rigging of his flagship.  When a mine sank the lead vessel and the captains of the other ships hesitated, Farragut shouted, "damn the torpedoes, full speed ahead."  And rammed and shelled the rebel fleet into submission.  It was the first good news for the Union, and Lincoln, all year. |  |  |  |
| Benjamin Franklin Jackson  Actor | "In Camp, near Atlanta.  Dear Companion  I seat myself one time more in life to drop you a few lines. I am wore out marching. We have been running from one place to another for 5 days.  I must close, for it is a very bad place to write.  Benjamin Franklin Jackson” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Back in Alabama, Benjamin Franklin Jackson's wife Martha, awoke with a start.  A mourning dove was sitting on her windowsill.  She took it as a sign her husband had been killed, and began to weep silently, so that her family would not hear her grief, and think her superstitious.  Her husband had been fatally wounded that morning, in battle with Sherman's men. |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman  Actor | "Mine eyes have beheld the promised land.  The domes and spires of Atlanta, are glittering in the sunlight before us, and only eight miles distant." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Finally, Sherman was at Atlanta.  For more than two months, Confederate General Joseph Johnston had kept his army intact, dodging Sherman's superior force and looking for the right moment to attack.  The opportunity never came.  An increasingly frustrated Jefferson Davis, now removed the popular Johnston.  His troops were stunned. |  |  |  |
| Sam Watkins  Actor | "The news came like a flash of lightning, staggering and blinding everyone.  Farewell, old fellow, we privates loved you, because you made us love ourselves.  Sam Watkins” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Joseph Johnston's replacement was 33-year-old John Bell Hood of Texas.  His arm had been mangled at Gettysburg, and he'd lost a leg at Chickamauga.  But his recklessness remained intact.  His men called him "Old Wooden Head." |  |  |  |
| Robert E.  Lee  Actor | "Hood is a bold fighter. I am doubtful as to other qualities necessary.  Robert E. Lee” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Sherman was delighted with Hood, sure he would be attacked at last.  Many of his units were now armed with Henry Repeating Rifles, capable of firing 15 shots without being reloaded.  Outgunned Rebels complained the Yankees could now load on a Sunday, and keep shooting all week.  To cut off Atlanta's rail links with Richmond, Sherman sent 35-year-old General James McPherson's army, east of the city.  McPherson was a special favorite of Sherman's. Handsome, warm-hearted, intelligent.  "If he lives," Sherman predicted, "he'll outdistance Grant and myself."  Northern papers cheered the Union advance, and daily predicted Atlanta's fall.  But on July 22nd, Hood rushed to counter the new, Union threat.  The Battle of Atlanta had begun.  It raged all afternoon. The lines forming, falling back, reforming, attacking again.  At 2:00, General McPherson himself, went to inspect the imperiled Union position, and rode right into a band of Rebel skirmishers.  Ordered to surrender, McPherson raised his hat politely, turned his horse about, and raced for the Union lines. The Rebels shot him in the back.  Sherman covered the body of his young friend with an American flag, and wept. |  |  |  |
| Jacob D. Cox  Actor | "Sherman had the rare faculty of remaining calm under great responsibilities, and scenes of great excitement. At such times, his eccentricities disappeared.  His mind seemed never so clear, his confidence never so strong, his spirit never so inspiring, in the crisis of some fierce struggle. Like that of the day when McPherson fell in front of Atlanta.  General Jacob D. Cox” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Crying, "McPherson and revenge, boys, McPherson and revenge," the Union army smashed down on the Rebels.  In less than 30 minutes, Hood was forced to withdraw.  At Ezra Church, west of the city, Hood again tried to rout Sherman's army.  Again he failed.  One third of his army was gone, 20,000 men, and Hood fell back into Atlanta. |  |  |  |
| Sam Watkins  Actor | "I cannot describe it. I remember I went in the rear of the building, and there I saw a pile of arms and legs rotting and decomposing.  I have no recollection in my whole life of ever seeing anything that I remember with more horror.  Sam Watkins” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Behind their ramparts, the Confederates waited for Sherman to attack.  "The Yankee Gents can't get their men to charge our works," a Texan said.  But Sherman saw no need to be so rash.  He sealed off the city's supplies and waited.  Federal guns began shelling the heavily fortified Confederate trenches, and the city beyond. |  |  |  |
| Sam Richards  Actor | "Saturday, August 21st.  Another week of anxiety and suspense has passed, and the fate of Atlanta is still undecided.  It is said, that about twenty lives had been destroyed by these terrible missiles since the enemy began to throw them into the city.  It is like living in the midst of a pestilence.  No one can tell, but he may be the next victim." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Outside Atlanta, things were no better.  "The enemy hold us by an inferior force," Sherman admitted, as the siege dragged on. "We are more besieged than they."  "Both Grant and Sherman," George Templeton Strong predicted from New York, "are on the eve of disaster."  Every evening for a month during the siege, a Georgia sharpshooter played his cornet so beautifully that men on both sides stopped to listen.  Finally, on August 31st, the same day that George McClellan was nominated for president, Sherman hurled most of his army against the Macon & Western Railroad, south of the city, in one more attempt to break Hood's grip.  It worked.  On September 1, 1864, Hood abandoned Atlanta.  Sherman's troops marched in the next day. |  |  |  |
| William Tecumseh Sherman  Actor | "Atlanta is ours and fairly won." |  |  |  |
| George Templeton Strong | "September 3, 1864  Glorious news this morning. Atlanta taken at last.  It is, coming at this political crisis, the greatest event of the war.  George Templeton Strong” |  |  |  |
| Ulysses S. Grant  Actor | "Dear General Sherman  I feel you have accomplished the most gigantic undertaking given to any general in this war, and with a skill and ability that will be acknowledged in history as unsurpassed, if not unequalled.  U.S. Grant” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In Sherman's honor, Grant ordered a 100-gun salute, fired into the Confederate works at Petersburg. |  |  |  |
| Mary  Chesnut  Actor | "Atlanta is gone. That agony is over.  There is no hope, but we will try to have no fear.  Mary Chesnut” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | To avenge Sherman's victories in Georgia, six Confederate agents slipped into New York City, armed with phosphorous, intent upon burning down the city's most fashionable hotels.  They managed to light 10 fires, and set P.T. Barnum's museum ablaze.  Firemen put everything out.  All but one of the Confederates got away.  "The people of the North can't be rolling in wealth and comfort," the captured man said, before he was hanged, "while we at the South are bearing all the hardship and privations."  From the front, on his wedding anniversary, Robert E. Lee wrote home to his wife in Richmond. |  |  |  |
| Robert E.  Lee  Actor | "Dear Mary  Do you recollect what a happy day 33 years ago this was?  How many hopes and pleasures it gave birth to?  God has been very merciful and kind to us, and how thankless and sinful I have been.  I pray that he may continue his mercies and blessings to us, and give us a little peace and rest, together in this world.” |  |  |  |
| Abraham  Lincoln  Actor | "That man Haupt has built a bridge across the Potomac creek about 400 feet long and nearly 100 feet tall, over which loaded trains are running every hour.  And there is nothing in it but beanpoles and cornstalks.  Abraham Lincoln” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Near Petersburg, the Union camp at City Point, on the James River, suddenly found itself one of the world's busiest seaports, with bakeries, barracks, warehouses, a 200-acre tent hospital, more than a mile of wharves, and a new 70-mile railroad built by Herman Haupt, in record time, to bring supplies and fresh troops, right up to the Union trenches.  "Not merely profusion but extravagance," a visitor wrote, "soldiers provided with everything."  An industrial machine of unparalleled power, now kept the war supplies streaming to the front.  In Cleveland, Ohio, when the war began, there was not a single forge or foundry.  When the war ended, there were 21, employing 3,000 men and turning out 60,000 tons of steel a year.  By then, the Cold Spring Foundry opposite West Point on the Hudson was producing 7,000 artillery projectiles a week.  And the military telegraph system, was carrying over 3,300 messages a day, along 15,000 miles of wire. |  |  |  |
| New York Herald  Reader | "The World has seen its iron age, its silver age, its golden age, and its bronze age.  This is the age of shoddy." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | For shrewd northern businessmen, there were quick profits in army contracts.  Philip Armour gave up gold mining to strike it rich packing pork for the army.  Samuel Colt, of Hartford, told his men to "run the armory night and day with double sets of hands."  Jay Cooke sold war bonds, raised more than $400 million for the Union, and got rich on the commissions.  Unscrupulous contractors sold the war department rusty rifles, boats that leaked, caps that melted in the rain.  When one manufacturer was asked why the soles of the shoes he supplied fell off after a few minutes' marching, he explained they had been meant for the cavalry. |  |  |  |
| James Fisk  Actor | "You can sell almost anything to the government at almost any price you've got the guts to ask." |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | “I think that the North fought that war with one hand behind its back.  At the same time the war was going on, the Homestead Act was being passed.  All these marvelous inventions were going on.  In the spring of '64, the Harvard-Yale boat races were going on, and not a man in either crew ever volunteered for the army or the navy.  They didn't need them.  I think that if it had been more Southern successes, and a lot more, the North simply would have brought that other arm out from behind its back.  I don't think the South ever had a chance to win that war.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Out west, Bloody Bill Anderson, a Confederate Guerrilla, who rode with Union scalps tied to his bridle, led 30 men into Centralia, Missouri, killed 24 unarmed Federal soldiers, then ambushed 116 more.  On October 26th, Anderson himself, was ambushed and killed, but one of his close lieutenants, Jesse James, got away.  In Tennessee, Nathan Bedford Forrest's men surrounded Fort Pillow, held by a unit of Tennessee Unionists and black troops, and demanded its surrender.  When the Union commander refused, the fort was overrun.  As many as 300 soldiers, most of them black, were killed. Many after they surrendered. |  |  |  |
| Nathan Bedford Forrest  Actor | "It is hoped that these facts will demonstrate to the Northern people, that negro soldiers cannot cope with Southerners.  Nathan Bedford Forrest” |  |  |  |
| George Shaw  Actor | "I said, don't shoot me, and one of them said, ‘go out and hold my horse.’  I made a step or two, and he said, ‘turn around, I will hold my horse and shoot you, too.’  I no sooner turned around than he shot me in the face. I fell down as if I was dead. He shot me again and hit my arm, not my head.  I laid there until I could hear him no more, and then I started back.  I got back about sunup and wandered about until a gunboat came along.  And I came up on that with about 10 others.  Private George Shaw, Company B, 6th U.S. Heavy Artillery” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In retaliation for Fort Pillow, Grant ended the system under which prisoners had always been exchanged until the South agreed to recognize "no distinction whatever between white and colored prisoners."  Davis and Lee refused.  North and South, prisons soon bulged with unexchanged prisoners.  Already inadequate prison camps became nightmares.  The worst was the Confederate prison near Andersonville, Georgia.  Meant to hold a maximum of 10,000 Northern prisoners, by August 1864, it had 33,000.  The fifth largest city in the Confederacy.  Its Commandant, a German-Swiss immigrant named Henry Wirz, forbade prisoners to build shelters.  Most lived in holes scratched in the ground, covered by a blanket.  The daily ration was a teaspoon of salt, three tablespoons of beans, and half a pint of cornmeal.  A foul creek, called Sweet Water Branch, served as both drinking water and sewer. |  |  |  |
| Charles Hopkins  Actor | "One-third of the original enclosure was swampy, a mud of liquid filth, voidings from the thousands, seething with maggots in full activity.  Death at the hand of the guards, though murder in cold blood, was merciful  beside the systematic, studied, absolute murder inside, by slow death." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In one year, 13,000 men died at Andersonville, and were buried in mass graves. |  |  |  |
| Walt Whitman  Actor | "Can those be men?  Are they not really corpses?  They lay there, most of them, quite still, but with a horrible look in their eyes.  The dead there are not to be pitied as much as some of the living that have come from there. If they can be called living.  Walt Whitman” |  |  |  |
| Asa S. Clyne  Actor | "When I was taken prisoner, I weighed 165 pounds, and when I came out, I weighed 96 pounds.  And was considered stout compared with some I saw." |  |  |  |
| Unknown Southern Woman  Actor | "My heart aches for these poor wretches, Yankees though they are.  And I am afraid God will suffer some terrible retribution to fall upon us for letting such things happen.  If the Yankees should ever come to Southwest Georgia, and go to Anderson, and see the graves there, God have mercy on the land." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | With Sherman's victory at Atlanta, Lincoln's chances of re-election were improving.  And now came more bad news for the Confederacy.  Phil Sheridan, and 45,000 men, were on the loose in the Shenandoah. |  |  |  |
| General  Phil Sheridan  Actor | "The whole country, from the Blue Ridge to the North Mountains has been made untenable for a Rebel army.  I have destroyed over 2,000 barns, filled with wheat, hay, and farming implements, and over 70 mills.  Tomorrow, I will continue the destruction. When this is completed, the Valley will have but little in it for man or beast.  General Phil Sheridan” |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | He was sent there to clear it out once and for all.  His instructions were to strip it so clean that a crow flying across it would have to carry his own provender.  And he came close to doing it. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | No Union officer was fonder of fighting than Sheridan.  None, save Sherman, was so relentless.  His orders were to follow Jubal Early "to the death."  Before dawn, on October 18th, Jubal Early tried one last time to destroy Sheridan's army by attacking at Cedar Creek, while Sheridan himself was asleep at Winchester, 20 miles away.  At first it seemed early had succeeded.  Union forces were driven from their camps.  Sheridan mounted his great black horse Rienzi, and galloped through his retreating men, urging them to turn back.  They stopped and began to chant his name.  "God damn you," Sheridan shouted, "don't cheer me, fight."  The Union lines reformed, and won back the field.  Early fled, and the Shenandoah was closed forever, to the Confederacy. |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln  Actor | "General Sheridan, when this particular war began, I thought a cavalryman should be at least 6'4" high, but I have changed my mind.  5'4" will do in a pinch  Abraham Lincoln” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | At Petersburg, Grant fired a second 100-gun volley Into the enemy works. |  |  |  |
| Walt Whitman  Actor | "Dear Nat  I think well of the president.  He has a face like a Hoosier Michelangelo.  So awful ugly, it becomes beautiful, with its strange mouth, its deep-cut, crisscross lines, and its doughnut complexion.  I do not dwell on the supposed failures of his government.  He has shown an almost supernatural tact, in keeping the ship afloat at all.  I more and more rely, upon his idiomatic western genius.  Walt Whitman” |  |  |  |
| Harper's Weekly  Reader | “Harper's Weekly  Abraham Lincoln and Andrew Johnson have been elected by enormous  and universal majorities in almost all the states.  This result is the proclamation of the American people, that they are not conquered.  This is what they confirm by the re-election of Mr. Lincoln.  In himself, he is unimportant, but as the representative of the feeling and purpose of the American people, he is the most important fact in the world." |  |  |  |
| Abraham Lincoln  Actor | "I give thanks to the Almighty for this evidence of the people's resolution.  This contest has demonstrated to the world that a people's government can sustain a national election in the midst of a great civil war." |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | Sherman's and Sheridan's victories had changed the odds.  Lincoln carried 55 percent of the popular vote. Only three states, Kentucky, Delaware, and New Jersey, went to George McClellan.  Virtually all of the general's old command, the Union Army of the Potomac,  voted for Abraham Lincoln. |  |  |  |
| Unknown Union Soldier  Actor | "That grand old army performed many heroic acts, but never in its history, did it do a more devoted service than vote for Abraham Lincoln." |  |  |  |
| Jefferson Davis  Actor | "Not the fall of Richmond, nor Wilmington, nor Charleston, nor Savannah, nor Mobile, nor all combined, can save the enemy from the constant and exhaustive drain of blood and treasure, which must continue, until he shall discover that no peace is attainable, unless based on the recognition of our indefeasible rights.  President Jefferson Davis” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | If it hadn't begun before, the lost cause was born with his words.  As Davis spoke at Richmond, his audience could hear Grant's guns at Petersburg, just 20 miles away.  More and more, it was becoming a Confederacy of the mind. |  |  |  |
| Shelby  Foote –  Historian | It was a realization that defeat was foreordained.  Miss Chesnut, for instance, said, "it's like in a Greek tragedy, where you know what the outcome is bound to be. And we're living a Greek tragedy."  And things began to close in on them more and more.  There was scarcely a family that hadn't lost someone. There were a disruption of society. The blockade was working.  They couldn't get very simple things. Like needles to sew with. Very simple things.  And the discouragement began to settle in more and more, with the realization that they were not going to win that war.  Their political leaders did everything they could, especially Jefferson Davis, to assure them that this was the second American Revolution, and if they would stand fast, the way their forefathers had, victory was unquestionably gonna come.  But the realization came more and more, that it was not gonna come.  Especially that they were not gonna get foreign recognition. Without which, we wouldn't have won the first Revolution.  And all those things closed in on them. |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | In the North, the reservoir of men seemed bottomless.  Whole units, like the 3rd Massachusetts Volunteers, had still never heard a shot fired in anger.  Lincoln now issued a proclamation, making the last Thursday in November, a national day of Thanksgiving.  In the trenches at Petersburg, 120,000 turkey and chicken dinners, were served to Grant's huge army.  Only yards away, the Confederates had no feast, but held their fire all day, out of respect for the Union holiday.  Lincoln called for more men to finish the war.  The South had no more men to spare.  And William Tecumseh Sherman had begun his march to the sea. |  |  |  |
| James Caldwell  Actor | "We lay in grim repose, and expected the renewal of the mortal conflict.  The conviction everywhere prevailed, that we could sustain but one more campaign,  Captain James F.J. Caldwell.” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | On the night of November 25th, at the Winter Garden Theater on Broadway, Shakespeare's Julius Caesar opened.  Three brothers had the starring roles. Edwin, Junius, and John Wilkes Booth.  At one point in Shakespeare's play, Cassius speaks of the assassination of Caesar.  "How many ages hence, shall this our lofty scene be acted over, in states unborn and accents yet unknown?" |  |  |  |
| Union Casualty List  Reader | "Captain Clapp, 77th New York, wounded at Petersburg.  Captain Smith, 77th New York, wounded at Wilderness.  Captain Taylor, 61st Pennsylvania, wounded at Spotsylvania.  Captain Orr, 77th New York, lost arm at Cedar Creek.  Captain Defoe, eye shot out at Spotsylvania.  Major Ellis, 49th New York, died of wound at Spotsylvania.  Captain Hickmott, 49th New York, killed at Wilderness.  Lieutenant Lyon, 77th New York, killed at Spotsylvania.  Lieutenant Belding, 77th New York, killed at Cedar Creek.  Union officers, all killed in battle." |  |  |  |
| Washington Roebling  Actor | "It really looks as if it would never end.  The most inspiring sight is the flock of buzzards constantly hovering over us and waiting for their feast.  Those birds are at least impartial, because they eat both sides alike. The same, I suppose, is true of worms.  Washington Roebling” |  |  |  |
| Narrator  David  McCullough | By the spring of 1864, Union dead completely filled the military cemeteries of Washington and Alexandria.  Secretary of War Stanton ordered the Quartermaster General, Montgomery Meigs, to choose a new site.  Meigs was a Georgian, who had served under Lee in the peacetime army, but he had developed an intense hatred for all his fellow Southerners who fought against the Union he still served.  Without hesitation, he picked the grounds of Robert E. Lee's home at Arlington, for the new army cemetery, and ordered that the Union dead be laid to rest within a few feet of the front door, of the man he blamed for their deaths, so that no one could ever again live in the house.  In October, Meigs' own son John, was killed by Confederate guerrillas in the Shenandoah, and buried in Mrs. Lee's rose garden.  At one point that year, the Union army was sending back 2,000 wounded, maimed, and dying men a week to Washington.  Now the men Grant was sending to fight Robert E. Lee were being buried in Lee's own front yard.  And that yard became Arlington National Cemetery.  The Union’s Most Hallowed Ground |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| **Chapter / Episode 8 – War Is All Hell: 1865** | | | | |
|  |  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |
|  | "We believed that it was most desirable that the North should win.  We believed in the principle  We, or many of us at least, also believed that the conflict was inevitable  and that slavery had lasted long enough, but we equally believed that those who stood against us held just as sacred convictions that were the opposite of ours, and we respected them as every man with a heart must respect those who give all for their belief.  Oliver Wendell Holmes.  We are the veterans of the civil war,  '61 to '65.  This flag is of the hawkins' zouaves,  New york.  Now salute.  “As a southerner, I would say one of the main importances of the war is that Southerners have a sense of defeat.  Which, none of the rest of the country has.  You see in the movie Patton, the actor who plays Patton saying, "we Americans have never lost a war."  That's a rather amazing statement for him to make as Patton because Patton's grandfather was in Lee's Army of Northern Virginia, and he certainly lost a war.”  In 1865 in South Africa, whites drove the Basuto tribe from their land.  In Afghanistan, Russian troop movements along the border were a cause of great international concern.  At a monastery in Austria, Gregor Mendel established the principle of heredity.  And in Ireland, the poet William Butler Yeats was born.  In 1865, in America, Samuel Clemens published his first short story as Mark Twain.  The 13th amendment, abolishing slavery, was formally ratified.  And the Klu Klux Klan was formed.  In 1860, most of the nation's 31 million people, lived peaceably on farms or in small towns.  By 1865, everything had changed.  Sharpsburg, Maryland. Fredericksburg, Virginia. Murfreesboro, Tennessee. Gettysburg, Pennsylvania. Vicksburg, Mississippi. Atlanta, Georgia.  By the beginning of 1865, the Confederacy was dying.  Only the tattered Confederate Army of Tennessee remained.  Its soldiers, like Sam Watkins, worried more about food and blankets and shoes than fighting.  Elisha Hunt Rhodes and 120,000 other Union troops were dug in, unable to dislodge the stubborn Rebel army.  Atlanta had been razed, and Georgia and the Carolinas lay helpless in William Tecumseh Sherman's path.  As the new year began, Robert E. Lee assumed command of all Southern forces, and, with it, the hopeless task of hurling back the huge Union armies now closing in from every side.  With victory within his grasp, Abraham Lincoln looked forward to a second presidential term, and a new challenge.  Healing the nation, he had struggled so hard to reunite.  "Here was the greatest and most moving chapter in American history, a blending of meanness and greatness, an ending and a beginning.  It came out of what men were, but it did not go as men had planned.  Of all men, Abraham Lincoln came the closest to understanding what had happened.  Yet even he, in his final backward glance, had to confess that something that went beyond words had been at work in the land.  The Almighty had his own purposes.  Bruce Catton”  "My aim was to whip the Rebels, to humble their pride, to follow them to their innermost recesses, and to make them fear and dread us."  War is cruelty. There's no use trying to reform it.  The crueler it is, the sooner it will be over.  William Tecumseh Sherman”  "War is all hell," William Tecumseh Sherman once said, and it was now his aim to bring that hell to the heart of the Confederacy.  He saw from the very beginning, how hard a war it was going to be, and when he said how hard a war it was going to be, he was retired under suspicion of insanity, and then brought back when they decided maybe he wasn't so crazy after all.  Sherman is maybe the first truly modern general.  He was the first one to understand, in the present-day world, that civilians were the backers-up of things, and that if you went against civilians, you deprived the army of what kept it going,  So he quite purposely made war against civilians.  From Atlanta in late 1864, Sherman proposed to march his army, through the heart of Georgia all the way to Savannah.  His army would live off the land, destroying everything in its path, that could conceivably aid the faltering Confederacy, and a good deal that couldn't.  "I can make this march," he promised, "and make Georgia howl."  Lincoln's advisors thought Sherman's plan foolhardy.  The president approved it.  "if you can whip Lee, and I can march to the Atlantic," Sherman told Grant,  “I think Uncle Abe will give us 20 days' leave to see the young folks."  "There are rumors that we are to cut loose and march south to the ocean.  We're in fine shape and, I think, I could go anywhere Uncle Billy would lead.  Private Theodore Upson”  Before leaving atlanta,  Sherman ordered all townspeople, white and black,  Out of their homes,  Then directed his men to burn or destroy  Anything of use to the rebels.  [cannon fire]  Civilians looted the town  And helped spread the blaze throughout the city.  "a grand and awful spectacle is presented to the beholder  "in this beautiful city, now in flames.  "the heaven is one expanse of lurid fire.  "the air is filled with flying cinders.  "the city which, next to richmond,  "has furnished more material for prosecuting the war  Than any other in the south..."  "exists no more as a means for injury  To be used by the enemies of the union."  Sherman began his march.  62,000 men in blue were on the move  In two great columns.  Their supply train stretched 25 miles.  A slave watching the army stream past  Wondered aloud if anybody was left up north.  "the name of the captor of atlanta, if he fails now,  "will become the scoff of mankind  "and the humiliation of the united states for all time.  If he succeeds, it will be written on the tablet of fame."  Londonherald.  [cannon fire]  "reaching the hill just outside the old rebel works,  "we paused to look back.  "behind us lay atlanta in ruins,  "the black smoke rising high in the air,  "hanging like a pall.  "then we turned our horses' heads to the east.  "atlanta was soon lost behind the screen of trees  And became a thing of the past."  [shelby foote] it had been cumulative evidence  That an army could subsist itself  On what was growing in the fields, winter or summer,  And they were a moving city, like.  They would grind their own corn  At grist mills along the way,  Butcher their own cattle.  Sherman was perfectly satisfied he could make the march  Without difficulty with regard to supplies.  In fact, they ate better on that march  Than they did not marching.  Sweet potatoes were particularly prized, and pork.  They had plenty to eat.  "the most gigantic pleasure excursion ever planned.  "it already beats everything i ever saw soldiering  And promises to prove much richer yet."  Fell to grant's army.  "we had a gay old campaign.  "destroyed all we could not eat, stole their niggers,  "burned their cotton and gins, spilled their sorghum,  "burned and twisted their railroads,  And raised hell, generally."  Sherman's men tore up railroads,  Heating the rails and twisting them beyond repair.  It became a trademark--  Sherman's neckties.  He forbade his men to plunder the homes they passed,  But neither he nor they took the order very seriously.  "i've got a regiment that can kill, gut, and scrape a pig  Without breaking ranks."  "they say no living thing is found in sherman's track,  "only chimneys, like telegraph poles,  To carry the news of his attack backwards."  Mary chesnut.  "i doubt if history affords a parallel  "to the deep and bitter enmity of the women of the south.  "no one who sees them and hears  But must feel the intensity of their hate."  [cannon fire]  "as far as the eye could reach,  "the lurid flames of burning houses  "lit up the heavens.  "i could stand out on the veranda  And, for 2 or 3 miles, watch the yankees as they came on."  "i could mark when they reached the residence  Of each and every friend on the road."  The troops looted slave cabins, as well as mansions,  Poked their ramrods into flower beds  In search of buried valuables,  And burned everything in their path.  "the thousand pounds of meat in my smokehouse is gone.  "my 18 fat turkeys, my hens,  "chickens, and fowl, my young pigs  "are shot down in my yard  As iftheywere the rebels."  "on this campaign towards the citizens  "have been enough to blast a more sacred cause than ours.  We hardly deserve success."  At milledgeville, georgia,  Sherman's men boiled their coffee  Over bonfires of confederate currency,  Held a mock session of the legislature  That passed a resolution returning georgia to the union.  Sherman's men were feasting on delicacies  Foraged from local farms  When a band of emaciated men tottered into the firelight.  They were union escapees from andersonville prison.  An indiana colonel remembered  That the sight of the starved men  "sickened and infuriated" his troops.  "when foraging now,  "they think of the tens of thousands  "of their imprisoned comrades slowly perishing with hunger,  And they sweep with the scythe of destruction."  [cannon fire]  Would cross 425 miles of hostile territory  And wreak $100 million worth of havoc.  The south would never forget.  "we will fight you to the death.  "better to die a thousand deaths  Than submit to live under you and your negro allies."  General john bell hood.  Lacking a leg and the use of one arm,  John bell hood had to be strapped to the saddle each morning,  But he fought as hard and as recklessly as ever.  Hood and his dwindling army  Now tried to divert sherman's attention  By moving north to join forces  With nathan bedford forrest's cavalry  And invade tennessee.  Sherman was delighted.  "if he will go to the ohio river,  I'll give him rations," he said.  "mybusiness is down south."  Waiting for hood in tennessee  Was a fresh, well-equipped union army  1/3 again as large as hood's,  Commanded by george thomas, "the rock of chickamauga."  At franklin, hood ordered a series of 13 hopeless charges  In which 12 confederate generals  And 7,000 soldiers were lost,  More men than u.s. grant had lost at cold harbor  The year before,  More than george mcclellan lost  In all the battles of the 7 days in 1862.  Franklin is a horrendous battle,  And the flower of the army fell.  There's a strong suspicion  That hood was trying to discipline his army  By staging that charge,  And there's some truth in it.  His army was wrecked.  The defeat at nashville is in large part  Due to what had happened at franklin a month before.  At nashville, george thomas attacked  What was left of hood's army.  "my boot was full of blood  "and my clothing saturated with it.  "i reached general hood's headquarters.  "he was much agitated and affected,  "pulling his hair with his one hand--  "he had but one--  And crying like his heart would break."  Sam watkins.  Hood's army had disintegrated.  "i beheld for the first and only time," he confessed,  "a confederate army abandon the field in confusion."  Hood resigned.  Lee recalled joe johnston to active duty  And put him in charge of patching together  Whatever confederate forces remained outside of virginia.  "we were willing to go anywhere  "or to follow anyone who would lead us.  "we were anxious to flee, fight, or fortify.  "i have never seen an army so confused and demoralized.  The whole thing seemed to be tottering and trembling."  "gentlemen, you cannot qualify war  In harsher terms than i will."  "we cannot change the hearts  "of these people of the south,  "but we can make war so terrible  "and make them so sick of war  "that generations will pass away  Before they again appeal to it."  William tecumseh sherman.  "darkest of all decembers  "ever my life has known,  "sitting here by the embers,  Stunned, helpless, alone."  Mary chesnut.  "my name is charles jess.  "i was born in south carolina as a slave,  "and i was freed  "when sherman's army came into the county of chatham.  "i was a union man.  "i was a slave and could not be anything else  "because i wanted my freedom,  "and i hoped and expected it would give me my freedom,  As it did."  "the negroes followed the army  "like a sable cloud in the sky before a thunderstorm.  They thought it was freedom now or never."  25,000 slaves fled to sherman's army,  Jubilant he had come to liberate them,  But fearful that if they strayed too far from his columns,  They would be caught by confederate guerrillas.  "perfect anarchy reigned," one plantation owner said.  It was, said another, "the breath of emancipation."  And the yankees would come, and after a while,  There would be a whole troop of men come.  They said they were yankees,  All riding horses.  So i asked them, i said, "where are they going?"  They said they all going home now.  They said, "well, all of you niggers is all free now."  [sherman] "they gather around me in crowds,  "and i can't find out whether i am moses or aaron,  But surely i am rated as one of the congregation."  "it seems the good people in the north  "are terribly worried about us.  "they called us the lost army,  "and some thought we would never show up again.  "i don't think they know what kind of an army this is  "that uncle billy has.  "why, if grant can keep lee and his troops busy,  We can tramp all over this confederacy."  Private theodore upson.  Throughout the north,  People wondered what had happened to sherman's army,  Until suddenly,  William tecumseh sherman emerged near savannah.  "december 25, 1864.  "dear mr. President,  "i beg to present you, as a christmas gift,  "the city of savannah,  "with 150 heavy guns and plenty of ammunition,  Also about 25,000 bales of cotton."  He then regroups at savannah,  And in the last week  Of january,  He starts into south carolina.  South carolina gets it even worse than georgia  Because they figured that's where secession started.  Sherman now turned his columns northward  Into the carolinas.  A relentless winter rain was falling,  And confederate generals were confident  No army could march through the mud,  But sherman and his men made a steady 10 miles a day.  Battalions of axmen led the way,  Hacking down whole forests to construct corduroy roads.  "when i learned that sherman's army  "was marching through the salkehatchie swamps  "at the rate of a dozen miles a day  "and bringing its artillery and wagons with it,  "i made up my mind that there had been no such army in existence  Since the days of julius caesar."  Joseph e. Johnston.  [cannon fire]  Sherman's men were still harsher in south carolina  Than they had been in georgia.  "here is where treason began," a private said,  "and by god, this is where it shall end."  Few houses were left standing.  "the wind moans among the bleak chimneys  "and whistles through the gaping windows.  "the market is a ruined shell, its spire fallen in,  "the old bell, secessia,  "that had rung out every state as it seceded,  Lying half-buried in the earth."  On february 17, 1865,  Fort sumter was abandoned,  Along with all of charleston.  "thidisappointment,"" jefferson davis admitted,  "is extremely bitter."  "a city of ruins,  "of desolation,  Of vacant houses, of widowed women..."  "of rotting wharves,  "of deserted warehouses,  "of weed-wild gardens, of miles of grass-grown streets,  "of acres of pitiful and voiceful barrenness--  "that is charleston,  Wherein rebellion loftily reared its head."  [cannon fire]  "jack middleton writes from richmond,  "the wolf is at the door here.  "we dread starvation far more  "than we do grant or sherman.  Famine--that is the word now."  Mary chesnut.  Everywhere the union armies marched,  The back roads filled with confederate refugees.  Thousands fled to texas in search of a new start.  Thousands more flocked to richmond,  Hoping the confederate government would care for them.  There was little it could do.  The confederate government was coming apart.  The governor of north carolina  Refused to permit any but his own troops  To wear the 92,000 uniforms he was hoarding.  In georgia,  Governor joseph brown threatened to secede  From the confederacy.  States' rights still came first.  "if the confederacy fails,  "there should be written on its tombstone--  Died of a theory."  President jefferson davis.  "i have been up to see the congress,  "and they do not seem able to do anything  "except eat peanuts and chew tobacco,  While my army is starving."  Robert e. Lee.  Lee begged for more supplies.  Davis had none to give.  A single stick of firewood cost $5.00 in richmond.  A barrel of flour had risen to $250  And could rarely be found even at that price.  "i daily part with my raiment for food.  "we find no one who will exchange eatables  "for confederate money,  So we are devouring our clothes."  Hundreds of confederate soldiers were deserting every day,  Cold, hungry, barefoot,  Driven by desperate letters from home.  Lee asked that slaves now be armed  To defend the confederacy.  "we must decide," he said,  "whether the negro shall fight for us or against us.  Those willing to fight," he added,  Would be freed after the war."  The confederate congress finally authorized black troops  Because, as the richmondexaminersaid,  "the country will not deny general lee anything  He may ask for."  6 days later,  The citizens of richmond saw an astonishing sight--  A new confederate battalion  Made up of white convalescents and black hospital orderlies  Marching up main street to the strains ofdixie.  "you cannot make soldiers of slaves  "or slaves of soldiers.  "the day you make a soldier of them  "is the beginning of the end of the revolution,  "and if slaves seem good soldiers,  Then our whole theory of slavery is wrong."  Senator howell cobb, georgia.  Earlier that winter,  The united states congress had voted 119 to 56  To pass the 13th amendment to abolish slavery  And sent it to the states for ratification.  11 months later,  Slavery was officially abolished everywhere  And for all time.  "verily, the work does not end  "with the abolition of slavery,  But only begins."  Frederick douglass.  "i see the president almost every day.  "i saw him this morning about 8:30,  "coming into business.  "we have got so that we exchange bows, and very cordial ones.  "i see very plainly  "abraham lincoln's dark brown face with its deep-cut lines,  "the eyes always, to me,  With a latent sadness in the expression."  "none of the artists or pictures  "has caught the deep, though subtle and indirect, expression  "of this man's face.  "there is something else there.  "one of the great portrait painters  Of 2 or 3 centuries ago is needed."  Walt whitman.  [cannon fire]  "march 4.  "we captured 25 cannon.  "general mower fired them today in a salute  "in honor of the inauguration of mr. Lincoln  "for his second term.  "his first inauguration was not celebrated in north carolina,  "but the glorification over the beginning of his second term  Goes to make up the deficiency."  George nichols.  Inauguration day was cold and windy,  Just as it had been 4 years earlier...  But the u.s. capitol was now complete,  Its great iron dome in place,  Crowned by a bronze liberty.  Just before the president began to speak,  The clouds parted,  Flooding the stand with brilliant sunlight.  "fondly do we hope,  "fervently do we pray  That this mighty scourge of war may speedily pass away."  "yet if god wills that it continue  "until all the wealth piled up  "by the bondman's 250 years of unrequited toil  "shall be sunk  "and until every drop of blood drawn with the lash  "shall be paid by another drawn with the sword,  "as was said 3,000 years ago,  "so still must be said,  "the judgments of the lord  Are true and righteous altogether."  "with malice towards none,  With charity for all..."  "with firmness in the right  "as god gives us to see the right,  "let us strive on to finish the work we are in,  "to bind up the nation's wounds,  "to care for him who shall have borne the battle  And for his widow and his orphan..."  "to do all which may achieve and cherish  "a just and lasting peace among ourselves  And with all nations."  Can it be anyone but lincoln  That any of us could be drawn to  As the central figure of the war?  Because, in a way, he comprehended both sides.  "we must not be enemies. We must be friends."  [hail to the chiefplaying]  "i'm a tired man," lincoln said afterwards.  "sometimes i think i'm the tiredest man on earth."  In the crowd just a few yards from lincoln  Was the young actor john wilkes booth,  A pistol in his pocket.  His vantage point on the balcony,  Booth said afterwards, had offered  "an excellent chance to kill the president...  If i had wished."  John wilkes booth  Was a fervent believer in slavery and white supremacy,  But during 4 years of war,  He had not been able to bring himself  Actually to fight for the southern cause.  "i have begun to deem myself a coward  And to despise my own existence."  His mind fixed on lincoln  As the tyrant responsible for all the country's troubles  And his own.  Booth hatched a scheme to kidnap lincoln  And gathered a worshipful band of dubious conspirators  Willing to help out.  Lewis paine,  A wounded confederate  Who had recently sworn allegiance to the union.  David e. Herold,  A druggist's clerk  Who was thought by some to be mentally retarded.  George atzerodt,  A german-born wagon painter  Barely able to make himself understood in english.  And john h. Surratt,  A sometime confederate spy  Whose widowed mother mary  Kept a washington boarding house  Where booth and his admirers sometimes met.  [hoofbeats]  Two weeks after the inauguration,  Booth and his accomplices, all wearing masks,  Rode out toward the soldiers home,  Where lincoln often slept,  Hoping to intercept his carriage.  The president never came.  "so goes the world," booth wrote.  "might makes right."  [steam whistle]  Late in march, lincoln sailed down to city point, virginia,  To confer with his generals  Aboard grant's floating headquarters,  Thriver queen.  Sherman, who had interrupted his march through the carolinas,  Had met lincoln only once before, in 1861,  And found him then a weak and partisan politician  Unequal to his task.  The talks lasted two days.  Grant, sherman, and admiral porter  Detailed plans for one last major campaign.  Lincoln, satisfied that victory seemed within reach,  Outlined plans for peace.  "if the rebels would lay down their guns and go home," lincoln said,  "they should be welcomed back  As citizens of the united states."  "i never saw him again.  "of all the men i ever met,  "he seemed to me to possess more of the elements of greatness  "combined with goodness  Than any other."  William tecumseh sherman.  [cannon fire]  "my own corps was stretched  "until the men stood like a row of vedettes  "15 feet apart.  "it was not a line,  It was the mere skeleton of a line."  General john b. Gordon.  Ulysses s. Grant and robert e. Lee  Had faced one another in front of petersburg  For 9 months.  Slowly, steadily,  Grant had extended his trenches around petersburg.  Lee's lines had been forced to stretch, too,  But his army was shrinking.  In 9 months,  60,000 southern soldiers had deserted.  "all of us think we're whipped now.  "the men are ragged and are getting half rations.  "some say we'll have to go to georgey,  But the men will not go there."  The thinning confederate lines around petersburg  Finally extended 53 miles.  Grant's forces numbered 125,000.  Lee's had dwindled to 35,000.  [cannon fire]  Lee's only hope lay in moving his army to the southwest  To link up with johnston in the hills of north carolina  And fight on.  [cannon fire]  On march 25,  Confederates under john b. Gordon  Mounted a sudden night assault that briefly won possession  Of an earthwork called fort stedman.  It was lee's last advance.  Grant counterattacked,  Racing around the rebel flank  To block lee's escape at five forks.  There, on april 1,  He routed a confederate division under george pickett.  The next day,  Union forces attacked all along the petersburg line.  Slowly, relentlessly, and at great cost,  They drove the confederates out of their trenches.  Among the southern dead left behind  Were shoeless boys as young as 14.  "the conduct of the southern people  "appears many times truly noble, as exemplified, for instance,  "in the defense of petersburg.  "old men with silver locks lay dead in the trenches  "side by side with mere boys of 13 or 14.  "it almost makes one sorry to have to fight against people  Who show such devotion for their homes and their country."  Washington roebling.  A.p. hill, who had served lee faithfully in a dozen battles  And staved off confederate disaster at antietam,  Tried to rally his men.  Two union infantrymen shot him dead  As he rode between the lines.  "he is at rest,  And we who are left are the ones to suffer."  [yankee doodleplaying]  Petersburg, the scene of 9 months' siege,  As black civilians cheered the black soldiers  That led the union columns into the city,  Lee's army slipped across the appomattox river.  [bell chimes]  Jefferson davis was attending 10:00 services  That sunday morning  At st. Paul's episcopal church  When the sexton handed him a message.  "president davis, my lines are broken in 3 places.  Richmond must be evacuated this evening."  Robert e. Lee.  "i happened to sit in the rear of the president's pew,  "so near that i plainly saw the sort of gray pallor  "that came upon his face  As he read a scrap of paper thrust into his hand."  Davis hurried from the church  And ordered his government to move to danville, virginia,  140 miles to the south.  On the evening of april 2,  Davis and his cabinet boarded the last train,  A series of freight cars labeled "treasury department,"  "quartermaster's department," "war department."  "we tried to comfort ourselves by saying in low tones  "that the capital was only moved temporarily,  "that general lee would make a stand  "and repulse the daring enemy,  And that we would yet win the battle and the day."  A slave dealer named lumpkin  Failed to get his 50 chained slaves aboard.  He had to unlock $50,000 worth of property in the street  And let them go.  The retreating confederates set fire to much of richmond.  Mobs plundered stores, broke into abandoned houses.  The fire on land spread to the confederate arsenal.  The explosion rocked the city  And shattered windows for miles around.  "everything was in the wildest confusion.  "the low characters of the town had broken into everything  "and were looting the town,  "being aided to a considerable extent  "by the soldiers  Who had broken through all discipline."  "i saw a confederate soldier on horseback  "pause under my window.  "he wheeled and fired behind him,  "rode a short distance,  "wheeled and fired again.  Coming up the street rode a body of men in blue."  [battle hymn of the republic playing]  "arriving at the capital, i sprang from my horse,  "first unbuckling the stars and stripes from my saddle,  "and with captain langdon, i rushed up to the roof.  "together, we hoisted the first large flag over richmond  And, on the peak of the roof, drank to its success."  Mrs. Robert e. Lee, too crippled by arthritis to travel,  Remained in richmond.  The union commander posted a guard before her house,  A black cavalryman,  To ensure no harm came to her.  "april 3, 1865.  "thank god i have lived to see this.  "it seems to me  "that i have been dreaming a horrid nightmare  "for 4 years,  "and now the nightmare is gone.  I want to see richmond."  On april 3, abraham lincoln and his son tad  Arrived at rockett's wharf aboard a small barge  And were escorted through the smoking city  By a unit of black cavalry.  Freed slaves mobbed the president,  Laughing, singing, weeping for joy,  Kneeling before him,  Straining to touch his clothes.  "i know i am free," said one man,  "for i have seen father abraham and felt him."  The president walked about a mile through the crowd  And loped up the steps of the confederate white house,  Now union headquarters.  When he sat down at jefferson davis' desk,  The troops outside burst into cheers.  "richmond has fallen,  "and i have no heart to write about it.  "they are too many for us.  "everything lost in richmond, even our archives.  Blue-black is our horizon."  Mary chesnut.  "there is a stillness in the midst of which  "richmond, with her ruins and her unchanging spires,  "rests beneath a ghastly, fitful glare.  "we are under the shadow of ruins.  "from the pavements where we walk  "stretches a vista of devastation.  "the wreck, the loneliness seem interminable.  "there is no sound of life  "but the stillness of the catacomb,  "only as our footsteps fall dull on the deserted sidewalk  "and a funeral troop of echoes  "bump against the dead walls and closed shutters in reply.  "and this is richmond,  "says a melancholy voice.  And this is richmond."  On april 8,  Abraham and mary lincoln took a drive together  Past a country cemetery on the outskirts of petersburg.  "it was a retired place shaded by trees,  "and early spring flowers were opening on nearly every grave.  "it was so quiet and attractive  "that we stopped the carriage and walked through it.  "mr. Lincoln seemed thoughtful and impressed.  "he said,  "mary, you are younger than i. You will survive me.  "when i'm gone,  Lay my remains in some quiet place like this."  "general lee was riding slowly  "along the line of tangled wagons.  He rode erect, as if incapable of fatigue."  Lee's army fled westward.  Grant was right behind them.  "on and on, hour after hour,  "from hilltop to hilltop,  "the lines were alternately forming, fighting,  "and retreating,  "making one almost continuous battle.  "a boy soldier came running by at the top of his speed.  "when asked why he was running, he shouted back,  I'm running because i can't fly."  From danville on april 4,  Jefferson davis issued a proclamation  Pledging to fight on.  "relieved from the necessity of guarding cities,  "with our army free to move from point to point,  "nothing is now needed to render our triumph certain  "but our own unquenchable resolve.  No peace will ever be made with the infamous invaders."  On april 6 at saylers creek,  Union cavalry and infantry  Inflicted 6,000 casualties on lee's army  And captured 8 generals,  Including lee's own son custis.  He now had fewer than 25,000 men.  125,000 federal troops  Were now closing in on lee from 3 sides.  Union general phil sheridan wired grant,  "if the thing is pressed,  I think that lee will surrender."  "let the thing be pressed," lincoln answered.  An officer urged lee to surrender.  The general asked what the country would think of him if he failed to fight on.  "the country be damned," said the officer,  "there is no country.  "there has been no country for a year or more.  You'retthe country to these men."  "the few men who still carried their muskets  "had hardly the appearance of soldiers,  "their clothes all tattered and covered with mud,  "their eyes sunken and lusterless,  "yet still they were waiting for general lee to say  Where they were to face about and fight."  Magnus thompson, 35th virginia cavalry battalion.  Lee's confederate army was moving  Along one side of the appomattox river,  A willow-fringed run that any country boy could jump.  His pursuers clung to the opposite bank.  "5 p.m., april 7, 1865.  "general lee,  "the result of last week must convince you  "of the hopelessness of further resistance.  "i regard it as my duty to shift from myself  "the responsibility of any further effusion of blood  "by asking of you the surrender  "of that portion of the confederate states army  Known as the army of northern virginia."  Ulysses s. Grant.  On april 8,  Grant again flanked lee's army  And captured two trainloads of supplies.  The confederates were living on handfuls of parched corn.  That night,  Lee and his weary lieutenants gathered around a campfire  Near the little village of appomattox courthouse.  "we met in the woods at his headquarters  "by a low-burning bivouac fire.  "there was no tent, no table, no chairs, no camp stools.  "on blankets spread upon the ground  "or on saddles at the roots of trees  We sat around the great commander."  General john b. Gordon.  They were almost entirely surrounded,  Outnumbered nearly 5 to 1,  Without hope of resupply or reinforcement.  "by sunrise, we had reached appomattox station,  "where we might cut lee's retreat.  "already we heard the sharp ring of the horse artillery.  "there was no mistake.  "sheridan was square across the enemy's front,  "holding at bay all that was left  "of the proudest army of the confederacy.  It had come at last-- the supreme hour."  April 9 was palm sunday.  Lee ordered gordon to make one more attempt at breaking out.  At dawn, just outside appomattox courthouse,  Gordon's men drove federal cavalry from their positions  And swept forward to the crest of a hill.  Below them,  A solid wall of blue was advancing--  The entire union army of the james.  "there is nothing left for me to do  "but to go and see general grant,  And i would rather die a thousand deaths."  Shortly before noon,  Lee dispatched a letter under a white flag  Into the union lines.  Grant was resting in a field,  Nursing a blinding headache.  Suddenly, a horseman galloped up at full speed,  A reporter noted,  "waving his hat above his head and shouting at every jump."  Grant opened the envelope, looked at it,  Then asked his friend general john rawlins  To read it aloud--  Lee would surrender.  Grant himself said nothing,  Betrayed no more emotion, a witness said,  Than "last year's bird nest,"  But his headache had instantly disappeared.  "no one looked his comrade in the face.  "finally colonel duff, chief of artillery,  "sprang upon a log and proposed 3 cheers.  "a feeble hurrah came from a few throats,  When all broke down in tears."  Lee dispatched colonel charles marshall  To appomattox courthouse  To find a suitable building  In which he and grant might meet.  The streets were almost deserted.  Marshall stopped the first civilian he happened to see,  Wilmer mclean, who reluctantly agreed  To loan the armies his house for the occasion.  "by a singular coincidence,  "the meeting of generals lee and grant  "took place in the house of wilmer mclean,  "the same gentleman who, in 1861,  "at the battle of bull run,  "had tendered his house to general beauregard  "for headquarters.  "he removed from manassas after the battle  "with the intention of seeking some quiet nook  Where the alarms of war could never find him."  "1:00 came.  "i turned about.  "there behind me appeared a commanding form,  "superbly mounted, richly accoutered,  "of imposing bearing, noble countenance,  "with expression of deep sadness  "over-mastered by deeper strength.  "it was no other than robert e. Lee.  "not long after appeared another form--  "plain, unassuming, simple, and familiar to our eyes,  "but as awe-inspiring as lee in his splendor and sadness.  "it was grant,  "sitting his saddle with the ease of a born master,  "taking no notice of anything,  "all his faculties gathered into intense thought.  "he seemed greater than i had ever seen him,  A look as of another world about him."  Lee arrived at the mclean house first,  Magnificent in a crisp gray uniform,  An engraved sword at his side.  "i have probably to be general grant's prisoner,"  He explained to an aide,  "and thought i must make my best appearance."  He waited half an hour for grant to arrive.  The union commander wore a private's dirty jacket.  His boots and trousers were splattered with mud.  He had no sword.  The two commanders shook hands.  "what general lee's feelings were, i do not know.  "as he was a man of much dignity  "with an impassible face,  "his feelings were entirely concealed  "from my observation,  "but my own feelings were sad and depressed.  "i felt like anything rather than rejoicing  "at the downfall of a foe  "who had fought so long and valiantly  "and had suffered so much for a cause,  "though that cause was, i believe,  One of the worst for which people ever fought."  Grant reminded lee that they had met once before  During the mexican war.  Lee said he had not remembered what grant looked like.  "our conversation grew so pleasant  "that i almost forgot the object of the meeting.  General lee called my attention to the object."  They knew each other.  Grant remembered lee very well.  Lee didn't quite remember grant.  That was understandable  From the time that they were acquainted  Back in the early days,  But i think it was the sensitivity  That the two men had for each other  And for the moment,  Enormous dignity and yet the necessary informality--  Grant not wanting to get to the point too quickly,  Lee bringing him up shortly  To the point of why they're together;  Lee dressed in his last good uniform,  Grant apologizing that he was rushing from the field  And didn't have time to change;  The scribe being unable to hold the pen steady  And having it taken by another soldier;  The, uh...  That, from lee's point of view, awful moment,  And from grant's point of view, glorious moment,  And yet for the two of them, a sad and quiet moment;  And lee taking his leave  And doffing his hat from traveller  And riding back to his troops  After securing those reasonable terms.  It was the beginning  Of the unification of the country.  The terms grant offered were simple and generous.  Confederate officers  Could keep their side-arms and personal possessions.  Officers and men who owned their own horses  Could keep them, too.  It was planting season.  Grant asked lee how many men he had  And if they needed any rations.  Lee said he no longer knew the size of his army,  But he was sure all his men were hungry.  Grant offered 25,000 rations.  "this will have the best effect upon my men.  "it will be very gratifying  And do much toward conciliating our people."  Colonel eli s. Parker,  A seneca indian and a member of grant's staff,  Inscribed the articles of surrender  For the two commanders to sign.  The two men shook hands again.  Lee left the house, mounted traveller,  And started back toward his army.  The union soldiers began to cheer.  Grant ordered them to stop.  "the confederates are now our prisoners,"  He explained,  "and we do not want to exult over their downfall.  "the war is over.  The rebels are our countrymen again."  Lee's men lined the road to his camp.  "as he approached,  "we could see the reins hanging loose,  "and his head was sunk low on his breast.  "as the men began to cheer,  "he raised his head, and, hat in hand, he passed by,  His face flushed, his eyes ablaze."  "as he passed, they raised their heads  "and looked upon him with swimming eyes.  "those who could find voice said good-bye.  "those who could not speak  Passed their hands gently over the sides of traveller."  "if one army drank the joy of victory  "and the other the bitter draught of defeat,  "it was a joy moderated by the recollection of the cost  "at which it had been purchased  "and a defeat mollified  "by the consciousness of many triumphs.  "if the victors could recall a malvern hill, an antietam,  "a gettysburg, a five forks,  "the vanquished could recall a manassas, a fredericksburg,  A chancellorsville, a cold harbor."  A crowd of soldiers waited in front of lee's tent.  "boys," he told them,  "i have done the best i could for you.  "go home now,  "and if you make as good citizens as you have soldiers,  "you will do well,  "and i shall always be proud of you.  Good-bye, and god bless you all."  He turned and disappeared into his tent.  The formal surrender came 3 days later.  General john b. Gordon,  Shot through the face and wounded 4 more times  In the service of the confederacy,  Led 20,000 men toward the union lines for the last time--  Not to fight, but to stack their arms  And surrender their battle flags.  There to receive them  Was major general joshua lawrence chamberlain,  Himself wounded six times for the union.  Promoted on the field at petersburg near death,  He had somehow survived.  "on they come  "with the old swinging route step and swaying battle flags.  "before us in proud humiliation  "stood the embodiment of manhood--  "thin, worn, and famished,  "but erect and with eyes looking level into ours,  "waking memories that bound us together as no other bond.  "was not such manhood to be welcomed back  "into the union so tested and assured?  "on our part, not a sound of trumpet more  "nor roll of drum, not a cheer nor word  "nor whisper of vainglorying nor motion of man,  "but an awed stillness, rather, and breath-holding,  As if it were the passing of the dead."  Joshua lawrence chamberlain.  Now chamberlain made an extraordinary gesture.  "chamberlain called his men into line,  "and as my men marched in front of them,  "the veterans in blue gave a soldierly salute  "to those vanquished heroes,  A token of respect from americans to americans."  General john b. Gordon.  "at the sound of that machinelike snap of arms,  "general gordon started,  "then wheeled his horse, facing me,  "touching him gently with the spur  "so that the animal slightly reared,  "and, as he wheeled, horse and rider made one motion.  "the horse's head swung down with a graceful bow,  "and general gordon dropped his sword point to his toe  In salutation."  [fireworks exploding]  In washington, fireworks filled the sky.  A great crowd gathered around the white house  And called for lincoln.  He was too weary to make a formal speech  But asked the band to playdixie.  "i have always thought it one of the best tunes i ever heard," he said.  The next day,  Lincoln walked over to alexander gardner's studio  At the corner of seventh and d street  To sit for another portrait.  Somehow, the glass-plate negative cracked  While being developed.  The photographer made a single print,  Then threw the negative away.  There would be plenty of time to make more lincoln portraits.  Just a few blocks away,  A friend found john wilkes booth alone in his darkened room  And asked him if he wanted to get a drink.  "yes," said booth,  Who was now drinking a quart of brandy a day,  "anything to drive away the blues." |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| **Chapter / Episode 9 – Better Angels of Our Nature: 1865** | | | | |
|  |  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |
|  | [Piano playingwhen johnny comes marching home again]  "were these things real?  "did i see those brave and noble countrymen of mine  "laid low in death and weltering in their blood?  "did i see our country laid waste and in ruins?  "did i see soldiers marching,  "the earth trembling and jarring beneath their measured tread?  "did i see the ruins  "of smoldering cities and deserted homes?  "did i see the flag of my country,  "that i had followed so long,  Furled to be no more unfurled forever?"  "surely they are but the vagaries  Of mine own imagination."  [cannon fire]  "but hush! I now hear the approach of battle.  "that low, rumbling sound in the west  Is the roar of cannon in the distance."  Private sam watkins, company h, 1st tennessee regiment.  "strange, is it not,  "that battles, martyrs, blood, even assassination  Should so condense a nationality?"  Walt whitman.  It istheevent in american history  In that it is the moment  That made the united states as a nation,  And i mean that in different ways.  The united states was obviously a nation  When it adopted a constitution,  But it adopted a constitution  That required a war to be sorted out  And therefore required a war to make a real nation  Out of what was a theoretical nation  As it was designed at the constitutional convention.  Before the war, it was said, "the united states are."  Grammatically, it was spoken that way  And thought of as a collection of independent states.  After the war, it was always "the united states is,"  As we say today without being self-conscious.  That sums up what the war accomplished.  It made us an "is."  The confederate states of america had once stretched  From the rappahannock to the rio grande.  Its leaders had once dreamed of a tropical empire  Reaching ever southward  To mexico, guatemala, nicaragua, brazil.  By april 1865, the dream was gone.  Richmond had fallen.  The confederate government, and jefferson davis with it,  Had fled into the wilderness of north carolina.  The confederate armies, once the terror of the union,  Had been battered and starved almost out of existence  And then forced to surrender at appomattox,  Where ulysses s. Grant had finally cornered robert e. Lee.  In april 1865,  Elisha hunt rhodes would receive the best news of the war  And then the worst.  In the woods of north carolina, two old adversaries,  William tecumseh sherman and joseph e. Johnston,  Would meet on the field of battle one last time.  By then, confederate sam watkins would write,  "the once proud army of tennessee  Had degenerated to a mob."  In april 1861,  Abraham lincoln had implored his countrymen not to go to war,  To listen to "the better angels of their nature."  Now in april 1865,  The bloodshed was finally coming to an end.  John wilkes booth could not accept that the war was over.  In four years,  More than a million photographs were made of the war.  Now no one seemed to want them anymore.  Mathew brady went bankrupt.  Thousands of glass-plate negatives were lost,  Mislaid or forgotten.  Thousands more were sold to gardeners,  Not for the images they held, but for the glass itself.  In the years that followed appomattox,  The sun slowly burned the image of war  From thousands of greenhouse glass panes.  "the civil war," a harvard professor wrote at the time,  "opened a great gulf  "between what happened before in our century  "and what has happened since.  "it does not seem as if i were living  In the country in which i was born."  The war was over, and it was not over.  "my shoes are gone. My clothes are gone.  "i'm weary, sick, and hungry.  "my family have all been killed or scattered.  "i have suffered all this for my country.  "i love my country, but if this war is ever over,  I'll be damned if i ever love another country."  "so blackwood and i left the army--ourarmy--  "left them there on the hill  "with their arms stacked in the field,  "all in rows, never to see it anymore.  "telling clarke and bell good-bye,  "we crossed the road into the fields and thickets  "and in a little while lost sight of all that told  Of the presence of what was left of the army."  Barry benson.  "monday, april 10th.  "lee and his army have surrendered!  "gloria in excelsis deo.  "they can bother and perplex none but historians henceforth,  "forever.  There is no such army anymore. God be praised."  George templeton strong.  "near appomattox courthouse, virginia.  "glory to god in the highest!  "peace on earth, good will to men!  "lee has surrendered, and the war will soon end.  "how can i record the events of this day?  "such a scene only happens once in centuries.  "general meade rode like mad down the road, shouting,  "the war is over, and we are going home.  "the men threw their knapsacks and canteens into the air  "and howled like mad.  "the rebels are half-starved,  "and our men divided their rations with them.  "i cried and laughed by turns.  "i was never so happy in my life.  "i thank god for all his blessings to me  And that my life has been spared to see this glorious day."  Elisha hunt rhodes.  Word of lee's surrender spread fast.  A galloping rider shouted the good news  To sherman's army in north carolina,  And one gleeful soldier bellowed back,  "you're the son of a bitch we've been looking for  All these four years!"  [bells tolling]  Church bells rang out in every northern town.  The people of deer isle, maine,  Had followed the steady march of union victories  With the same joy felt by towns all over the north,  And when news of appomattox got out to the islands,  Shouting horsemen carried it from house to house,  But the grieving did not end.  Private william toothaker succumbed to disease  Aboard a transport ship,  Leaving four small children  Whose memories of him would quickly fade.  And a letter came, informing private albion stinson's wife  That her husband had been killed near appomattox courthouse  Just five days before the confederate surrender.  When the news reached clarksville, tennessee,  The union military governor  Ordered a grand citywide celebration.  "all the storehouses were brilliantly lighted.  "these blue devils desecrated our churches  "by ringing the bells.  They did all in their power to a-rile us."  Nannie haskins.  At vicksburg, 2,000 liberated union prisoners  Crowded onto the decks of the steamboatsultana,  Gleeful to be on their way north at last.  Near memphis, a boiler exploded,  And she burst into flames.  More than 1,200 men died,  Still hundreds of miles from home.  "we are scattered,  Stunned..."  "the remnant of heart left alive in us  "is filled with brotherly hate.  "whose fault?  "everybody blamed by somebody else.  "only the dead heroes left stiff and stark  On the battlefield escape."  Mary chesnut.  When the news of the surrender reached edmund ruffin,  The old virginia secessionist  Who had fired one of the first shots at fort sumter,  He draped the rebel flag over his shoulders and shot himself  Rather than live, he wrote,  In a restored union with members of "the yankee race."  "you may forgive us,"  A surrendering rebel officer told joshua lawrence chamberlain  After the ceremony at appomattox,  "but we won'tbeforgiven.  "there is a rancor in our hearts which you little dream of.  We hate you, sir."  April 14, 1865 was good friday.  It also marked to the day  The fourth anniversary of the surrender of fort sumter,  And within the fort's pulverized walls that morning,  Everything was being readied for a noontime ceremony.  The fort's old union commander, colonel robert anderson,  Was to raise the same flag  He had been forced to haul down in 1861.  An audience of northern soldiers and dignitaries  And some 4,000 former slaves watched.  Few local whites chose to attend.  [the star-spangled banner playing]  "at first, i could not hear colonel anderson,  "for his voice came thickly,  "but soon, he said clearly,  "i thank god i have lived to see this day.  "after a few more words, he began to hoist the flag.  "it went up slowly and hung limp,  "a weather-beaten, frayed, and shell-torn flag  "not fit for much more work,  "but when it had crept clear of the shelter of the walls,  "a sudden breath of wind caught it,  "and it shook its folds and flew straight out above us.  "i think we stood up.  "somebody started the star-spangled banner.  "we sang the first verse,  "which is all that most people know.  "it did not make much difference,  "for a great gun was fired close to us from the fort,  "followed, in obedience to the president's order,  "by a national salute from every fort and battery  That fired upon fort sumter."  [cannon fire]  In washington that same day,  John wilkes booth dropped by ford's theatre  To pick up his mail.  A stagehand told him the president and general grant  Were expected to attend that night  To see the actress laura keene  In a british comedy calledour american cousin.  Booth told his devoted followers of a new plan.  He would shoot lincoln and grant.  Lewis paine was to kill  Secretary of state william seward.  George atzerodt was to shoot the vice president,  Andrew johnson.  Early that evening, booth led his horse  Out of the livery stable near ford's theatre.  A young boy was told to hold it at the stage door.  At the last minute,  General and mrs. Grant begged off the theatre party  And left the city for philadelphia.  The lincolns arrived  And took their seats in the presidential box.  With them were major henry rathbone  And his fiancee, clara harris.  What would you advise, ma?  Just remember, dear, he's rich.  [laughter]  Hush! Here he comes.  Ah, mr. Trenchard!  We were just saying  How you always seem sure of hitting your mark.  [laughter]  The president seemed to be enjoying the play.  His wife held his hand.  Booth swallowed two brandies at a nearby bar,  Then returned to the theatre.  He waited for the laughter to rise,  Then slipped silently into the president's box.  He held a dagger in his left hand,  A derringer pistol in his right.  The nasty beast!  [laughter]  Sir, your vulgarity renders you intolerable  In polite society.  [footsteps]  [laughter]  [door closes]  Maybe i don't know the manners of polite society,  But i guess i know enough to turnyouinside out, old gal,  You sockdolagizing old man-trap.  [laughter]  [gunshot]  Booth fired, then vaulted over the front of the box,  Caught his right spur in the draped flag,  And landed on stage, breaking his left leg.  He waved his dagger  And shouted something to the stunned audience.  Some thought he said, "sic semper tyrannis"--  Thus be it ever to tyrants,  Virginia's state motto.  Others heard it as "the south is avenged!"  For a long moment, the theatre was still,  Then mary lincoln screamed.  The bullet from booth's pistol  Had entered the back of lincoln's head,  Torn through his brain,  And lodged behind his right eye.  A surgeon from the audience pronounced the wound mortal.  Soldiers carried the unconscious president from the theatre  Into a boarding house across 10th street.  "we put him on the first floor  "and laid him on the bed.  "we had to get out.  "they wouldn't let anybody in  Without it was a doctor or something."  Private jacob soles.  "the giant sufferer lay extended diagonally across the bed,  "which was not long enough for him.  "he had been stripped of his clothes.  "his slow, full respiration lifted the covers  "with each breath he took.  His features were calm and striking."  Gideon welles.  The doctors could do nothing.  Mary implored her husband to speak to her  And wept so inconsolably,  She was finally taken into the front parlor.  Cabinet officers stood by helpless all night,  Doubly shocked to hear  That booth's accomplice lewis paine  Had stabbed secretary of state seward,  Then run out into the street crying,  "i'm mad! I'm mad!"  George atzerodt had been too frightened  To carry out booth's order to kill the vice president.  Around 6:00 in the morning,  Navy secretary welles stepped outside  And found the streets filled with silent, anxious people.  "a little before 7:00, i went back into the room.  "the death struggle had begun.  "robert, his son, stood at the head of the bed.  "he bore himself well,  "but on two occasions gave way and sobbed aloud,  Leaning on the shoulder of senator sumner."  At 7:22 on the morning of april 15, 1865,  Abraham lincoln died.  He was 56 years old.  Secretary of war edwin stanton said,  "now he belongs to the ages."  His pockets contained two pairs of spectacles,  A pocket knife, a linen handkerchief,  And a wallet.  In it were nine newspaper clippings  And a confederate $5.00 bill.  "mother prepared breakfast and other meals as usual,  "but not a mouthful was eaten all day by either of us.  "we each drank half a cup of coffee. That was all.  "little was said.  "we got every newspaper, morning and evening,  And passed them silently to each other."  Walt whitman.  The telegraph carried the news  Across the country in minutes.  No president  Had ever been murdered.  People would remember for the rest of their lives  Where they were and what they felt  And what the weather was like  When they heard what had happened.  "near appomattox courthouse, virginia,  "saturday, april 15.  "bad news has just arrived.  "corporal thomas parker has just said president lincoln is dead,  "murdered.  "we cannot realize that our president is dead.  May god help his family and our distracted country."  Elisha hunt rhodes.  "i have been expecting this.  "i am stunned,  "as by a fearful personal calamity,  "though i can see that this thing  "may be overruled to our great good.  We shall appreciate him at last."  George templeton strong.  "on the avenue in front of the white house  "were several hundred colored people,  "mostly women and children,  "weeping and wailing their loss.  "this crowd did not diminish  "through the whole of that cold, wet day.  "they seemed not to know what was to be their fate  "since their great benefactor was dead,  "and though strong and brave men wept when i met them,  "the hopeless grief of those poor colored people  Affected me more than almost anything else."  Gideon welles.  Lincoln's casket lay in state,  First in the east room of the white house,  Then in the rotunda of the capitol.  He was to be buried in springfield, illinois,  His adopted home.  The small coffin of his son willy,  Who had died in washington,  Was disinterred to make the journey with him.  Mary lincoln was too overcome with grief to go.  The funeral train took 12 days  And traveled 1,662 miles through the soft spring landscape,  Retracing the route lincoln had taken to washington  Four years earlier.  [train whistle blows]  In philadelphia,  Lincoln's coffin lay in independence hall,  Where he had declared he would "rather be assassinated"  Than surrender the principles  Embodied in the declaration of independence.  In new york, the procession took four hours.  Scalpers sold choice window positions along the route  For $4.00 and up.  From his grandfather's window,  A young theodore roosevelt watched the procession pass.  At cleveland, 10,000 mourners  Passed through a specially built outdoor pavilion  Every hour, all day,  Despite a driving rain.  It ended in springfield on may 4th.  The coffin rode to the illinois state house  In a magnificent black-and-silver hearse  Borrowed from st. Louis  And lay open in the chamber of the house of representatives  Where lincoln had warned  That "a house divided against itself cannot stand."  Among the thousands of people who shuffled past his coffin  Were many who had known him in the old days--  Farmers from new salem,  Law clients and rival attorneys,  Neighbors who had nodded to him each morning on his way to work.  Sarah, the president's stepmother,  When lincoln left for washington four years before.  "i felt it in my heart that something would happen to him,"  She said, "and that i should see him no more."  General joseph hooker  Led the final, slow march to oak ridge cemetery  Through a gentle spring rain.  "you white people are the children of abraham lincoln.  "we are at best only his stepchildren.  "viewed from the genuine abolition ground,  "mr. Lincoln seemed tardy, cold, dull, indifferent,  "but measuring him by the sentiment of his country,  "a sentiment he was bound as a statesman to consult,  "he was swift, zealous, radical, and determined.  "taking him all in all,  "measuring the tremendous magnitude  "of the work before him,  "considering the necessary means to ends,  "infinite wisdom has seldom sent any man into the world  Better fitted for his mission than abraham lincoln."  Frederick douglass.  [hoofbeats]  [neigh]  On april 26th,  Union cavalry trapped john wilkes booth  In a virginia tobacco barn and set it afire.  His accomplice david herold surrendered.  Booth preferred death.  A soldier shot him in the neck.  [gunshot]  At the end, he asked to have his hands raised,  Looked at them, and said, "useless, useless."  That day, in a farmhouse near durham station, north carolina,  Confederate general joseph johnston  Surrendered what was left of his army  To william tecumseh sherman.  Jefferson davis, exhausted but still defiant,  Fled southward,  Hoping somehow to rally the confederacy from texas.  "it may be that with a devoted band of cavalry,  "i can force my way across the mississippi,  "and if nothing can be done there,  "then i can go to mexico  And have the world from which to choose a location."  On may 10th at irwinville, georgia,  Union cavalry caught up with him.  With the arrest of its president,  The confederate government ceased to exist.  Davis was sent north to virginia under heavy guard.  Northern newspapers spread the false rumor  That davis had been apprehended wearing women's clothes.  North and south, he was reviled as the villain of the war.  These misconceptions about davis are so strange,  It's as if a gigantic conspiracy was launched.  It was partly launched by southerners who,  Having lost the war,  Didn't want to blame it on their generals,  So they blamed it on davis, the chief politician.  It was the southerners more than the northerners  Who vilified davis.  The northerners wanted to hang him,  But the southernersreally tore him down after the war.  Davis was imprisoned at fortress monroe  In a cell kept perpetually lit  And was made to wear chains,  Though he protested  That "those are orders for a slave,  And no man with a soul would obey such orders."  "dear varina, this is not the fate to which i invited you  "when the future was rose-colored for us both,  "but i know you will bear it even better than myself,  "and that, of us two,  I alone will ever look back reproachfully on my career."  [cannon fire]  Scattered fighting stuttered on in louisiana, alabama,  And mississippi, and even further west,  Where on may 13, 1865,  Private john j. Williams of the 34th indiana  Became the last man killed in the civil war,  In a battle at palmitto ranch, texas.  The final skirmish was a confederate victory.  On the morning of may 23, 1865,  The american flag flew at full staff above the white house  For the first time since lincoln's death.  U.s. grant and the new president, andrew johnson,  Stood side by side  To watch the grand armies of the republic pass in review  Down pennsylvania avenue from the capitol.  "and so it came,  "this glorious old army of the potomac,  "for six hours marching past,  "18 or 20 miles long,  "their colors telling their sad history.  "it was a strange feeling  "to be so intensely happy and triumphant  And yet to feel like crying."  The great procession took two days.  General george armstrong custer  Stole the show the first day,  Galloping past the dignitaries far ahead of his men,  Brandishing his sabre,  His long yellow hair whipping in the wind.  The crowds cheered loudest the next morning  As william tecumseh sherman rode past  At the head of the great army he had led to the sea.  By may, most of the yankees  Had withdrawn from clarksville, tennessee.  What remained of the 49th and 14th tennessee regiments  Came home.  Private john j. Denny of company k  Was not among them.  He had died at chancellorsville.  Of the 29 stewart college seniors who went to war,  16 had been killed in battle.  7 more had died of wounds and disease.  In september, railway service to clarksville was resumed.  Deer isle, maine, was an indirect casualty of the war.  When its men came home,  They found fishing had fallen off.  There was new money to be made in other industries  In nearby towns.  The old families moved away.  Some of the houses they left behind  Became summer homes for vacationers,  Most of whom were unaware of what had happened there.  John wilkes booth's accomplices  Were swiftly tried before a military commission.  All eight were found guilty.  Four were sentenced to be hanged,  Including mary surratt, whose only crime may have been  That she owned the boarding house  In which the conspirators met.  The executions took place  In the courtyard of the old penitentiary building  On july 7th.  The prisoners climbed the 13 steps  And sat in chairs while the charges were read aloud.  Two priests comforted mrs. Surratt  And shielded her from the sun.  White hoods were slipped over their heads.  General winfield scott hancock, the hero of gettysburg,  Clapped his hands three times,  And soldiers knocked the front part of the platform  Out from under the condemned.  [trap door opens]  It took them more than five minutes to die.  A northern newspaper said,  "we want to know their names no more."  "somewhere they crawled to die alone in bushes,  "low gullies, or on the sides of hills.  "there, in secluded spots,  "their skeletons, bleached bones, tufts of hair,  "buttons, fragments of clothing  Are occasionally found yet."  "our young men, once so handsome and so joyous,  "taken from us--  "the son from the mother,  "the husband from the wife,  The dear friend from the dear friend."  Walt whitman.  3.5 million men went to war.  620,000 men died in it,  As many as in all the rest of america's wars combined.  1/4 of the south's white men of military age were dead.  In iowa, half the men eligible to fight  Served in the union army,  Filling 46 regiments in all.  13,001 iowans died--  3,540 in battle,  515 while prisoners of war,  And 8,498 of disease.  Those figures were typical.  The 5th new hampshire regiment  Started out from concord in 1861 with 1,200 men.  When they returned to new hampshire  After gettysburg,  There were only 380 left.  In mississippi in 1866,  1/5 of the state's entire budget  Was spent on artificial limbs.  Millions were left with vivid memories of men  Who should have still been living but were not.  The survivors went home  And got on with the business of living.  "the morning after my arrival home,  "i doffed my uniform of first lieutenant,  "put on some of my father's old clothes,  "and proceeded to wage war on the standing corn.  "the feeling i had was sort of queer.  "it almost seemed, sometimes,  "as if i had been away only a day or two  "and had just taken up the farm work  Where i had left off."  Leander stillwell, formerly 61st illinois.  The boys who had gone off to war were old men now.  They walked over the old battlefields  With their families,  Pointing out the places where they had once done things  That now seemed impossible, even to them.  [shelby foote] they had a theoretical notion of having a country,  But when the war was over,  On both sides, they knew they had a country.  They'd been there.  They had walked its hills and tramped its roads.  They saw the country,  And they knew they had a country,  And they knew the effort that they had expended  And their dead friends had expended to preserve it.  It did that.  It made their country an actuality.  By the turn of the century,  Monuments and memorials and statues  Stood in city parks and courthouse squares  From maine to mississippi.  "number 220-- statue of american soldier.  "price, $450.  "when used as a family monument  "and photos of the deceased soldier can be furnished,  "we will model a new head in a true likeness.  The extra cost will be but $150."  The monumental bronze company, bridgeport, connecticut.  "hall's hill, virginia, july 4, 1865.  "another independence day in the army,  "and this has been my fifth.  "the first we passed at camp clark near washington,  "the second at harrison's landing,  "the third at gettysburg, pennsylvania,  "the fourth at petersburg,  "and today we are back in washington  "with our work finished.  The day has been fun."  Elisha hunt rhodes.  The war made elisha hunt rhodes.  Having risen from private to colonel during the war,  He was promoted to brigadier general after it,  Then went into the cotton and wool business in providence.  He devoted nearly every idle hour to veterans' affairs  And never missed a regimental reunion.  "america has no north, no south, no east, no west.  "the sun rises over the hills and sets over the mountains.  "the compass just points up and down,  "and we can laugh now at the absurd notion  "of there being a north and a south.  We are one and undivided."  Sam watkins.  Sam watkins returned to columbia, tennessee,  Ran the family farm,  And in the evenings worked on his memoirs,  Company aytch,  Despite, he said, "a house full of young rebels  Clustering around my knees and bumping my elbows."  But for the war,  These men were like any other possible friends.  You can remember thomas hardy's poem.  "had he and i but met, in some old ancient inn,  "we might sit down to wet right many a nipperkin.  "you know, but ranged as infantry, standing face to face,  "i shot at him as he at me, and killed him in his place.  "strange and curious, a war is.  "you shoot a fellow down you'd treat where any bar is,  Or help to half a crown."  Isn't that it?  Especially in our own society,  Where these men shared a common history,  Men and women,  Shared a common love of liberty,  Gave it slightly different english  As it spun through their lives,  But at the same time, when death came  And there was no more to fight about,  The sort of ocean of love and respect  Closed over them again,  And they were together.  "i think we understand what military fame is--  "to be killed on the field of battle  And have our names spelled wrong in the newspapers."  William tecumseh sherman.  William tecumseh sherman remained a soldier,  Fighting indians and shunning politics  Until his retirement in 1883.  "if nominated, i will not run,"  He told a republican delegation urging him to run for president.  "if elected, i will not serve."  He died in new york city in the winter of 1891.  Among the honorary pallbearers who stood bareheaded  In the cold outside the church  Was 82-year-old joe johnston,  Who had fought sherman in georgia and the carolinas.  When a friend warned him he might fall ill,  Johnston told him, "if i were in sherman's place  "and he were standing here in mine,  He would not put onhishat."  Johnston died 10 days later of pneumonia.  "april 1866.  "there are nights here with the moonlight,  "cold and ghastly, and the whippoorwills  "and the screech owls alone disturbing the silence,  "when i could tear my hair and cry alone  For all that is past and gone."  Mary chesnut.  When james and mary chesnut  Returned to mulberry plantation,  They found the old house stripped by union men,  The cotton burned.  Mary managed to make a little money  Selling butter and eggs  In partnership with her former slave,  And she continued to write,  But she never completed the mammoth task  Of reworking her war diary.  Jefferson davis was never tried for treason,  Nor could he ever bring himself to ask for a pardon.  After two years in prison,  He was released on bond and spent the rest of his life  Living off the charity of a wealthy widow  And working on a massive memoir,  The rise and fall of the confederate government.  He died, still persuaded of the justice of his cause,  At the age of 81.  Hiram revels of mississippi became the first black man  Ever elected to the united states senate,  Filling the seat last held by jefferson davis.  Vice president alexander stephens  Was imprisoned briefly and then re-elected  To his old congressional seat from georgia  As if there had never been a confederacy.  Mary todd lincoln  Never recovered from her husband's murder.  Her son tad died in 1871.  Five years later, her eldest son robert  Had her committed to a mental institution.  She spent her last years in springfield,  Rarely leaving a room  Whose curtains were never raised.  For clara barton,  The angel of the battlefield,  The grim work continued.  After the war, she went down to andersonville  And helped arrange dignified burial  For thousands of the union prisoners  Who had died there,  Then went on to found the american red cross.  On november 10, 1865, henry wirz,  Commandant at andersonville prison,  Was hanged in the yard  Of the old capitol prison in washington  For war crimes.  He pleaded he had only followed orders.  Walt whitman published drum taps,  A book of civil war poems he thought his finest,  Then turned largely to prose.  His writings revolutionized american literature.  Phil sheridan went out west to take on a new enemy,  Declaring that the only good indian was a dead indian.  George armstrong custer went west, too,  Carrying with him his belief in his own invincibility.  In 1876, the sioux and cheyenne proved him wrong.  George mcclellan stayed abroad for three years  After losing the election to lincoln.  He heard no slander about himself there, he said.  Then he came home  And got himself elected governor of new jersey.  The conqueror of fort sumter,  Pierre gustave toutant beauregard,  Promoted railroads,  Managed the louisiana state lottery,  And got rich.  Nathan bedford forrest  Promoted railroads, too, but failed.  In 1867, he became the first imperial wizard  Of the ku klux klan  But quit when the klan grew too violent even for him.  General dan sickles somehow escaped court martial  For his blunder at gettysburg.  He had the leg he lost in the peach orchard  Mounted in a miniature casket  And gave it to the army medical museum in washington,  Where he visited it regularly for 50 years.  John bell hood, who had survived  Some of the fiercest fighting of the war,  Died with his wife and daughter  In the new orleans yellow fever epidemic of 1878,  Leaving 10 orphaned children.  George pickett never overcame his bitterness  Over the destruction of his division at gettysburg.  Suffering from severe depression,  He turned down offers of command from the ruler of egypt  And the president of the united states  And ended up in the insurance business.  Confederate general james longstreet  Joined the republican party,  Served as grant's minister to turkey,  Dared to criticize lee's strategy at gettysburg,  And for all these things  Was considered a traitor to the south  By his former comrades-in-arms.  Frederick douglass  Continued to fight as hard for civil rights  As he had against slavery  And became the most powerful black politician in america.  A young visitor once asked him what he should do with his life.  "agitate!" the old man answered. "agitate! Agitate!"  Julia ward howe  Helped lead the american woman suffrage association  For 55 years.  At her funeral in 1910,  4,000 mourners joined in singing  Battle hymn of the republic.  Colonel washington roebling  Left the army corps of engineers,  Finished his father's bridge at cincinnati,  And went on to build  The greatest suspension bridge in the world in brooklyn.  "i have fought against the people of the north  "because i believed they were seeking to wrest from the south  "its dearest rights,  "but i have never cherished toward them  "bitter, vindictive feelings,  And i have never seen the day when i did not pray for them."  Robert e. Lee  Swore renewed allegiance to the united states  And by so doing persuaded thousands of his former soldiers  To do the same.  He was weary, ailing, and without work  In the summer of 1865  When an insurance firm offered him $50,000  Just for the use of his name.  He turned it down.  "i cannot consent to receive pay  For services i do not render."  He ended up in the noble way you might have expected  After you'd learned to expect it.  He didn't know what to do with himself after the war.  His profession was gone.  Even his country was gone.  He was approached, with a good deal of hesitation,  By people from a little school called washington college.  He accepted the presidency of washington college.  He had an annual salary of $1,500 and a house.  He spent the rest of his life  At what after his death was called washington and lee.  "the greatest mistake of my life," he said,  "was taking a military education."  Whenever his students  And those of the neighboring virginia military institute  Marched together,  Lee made a point of staying out of step.  He never returned to arlington again.  Once, on his way to washington,  He glimpsed his old home from a passing train.  He died in 1870.  In his last moments, he went back to the war,  Ordering a.p. hill to bring up his troops,  Just as stonewall jackson had  On his deathbed at chancellorsville.  Then lee called out, "strike the tent."  "for he will smile  "and give you with unflinching courtesy,  "prayers, trappings, letters, uniforms and orders,  "photographs, kindness, valor and advice,  "and do it with such grace and gentleness  "that you will know you have the whole of him pinned down,  "mapped out, easy to understand--  "and so you have.  "all things except the heart.  "the heart he kept... A secret to the end  From all the picklocks of biographers."  "i feel that we are on the eve of a new era  "when there is to be a great harmony  "between the federal and confederate.  "i cannot stay to be a living witness  "to the correctness of this prophecy,  But i feel it within me that it is to be so."  The qualities  That served ulysses s. Grant so well in war--  Stubbornness, independence, aversion to politics--  Deserted him in peacetime.  He entered the white house  Pledged to peace, honesty, and civil rights,  But corruption tainted his two terms.  After the presidency, he settled in manhattan,  Where he lent his name to a wall street brokerage firm.  Another partner in the firm  Stole millions from the shareholders in 1884  And bankrupted the grant family.  Once again, u.s. grant was penniless.  At almost the same moment, he was found to be suffering  From inoperable cancer of the throat.  Determined to provide for his family before he died,  He set to work writing his memoirs.  At mount mcgregor in the adirondacks.  Unable now to eat or speak,  He sat on the front porch in the afternoons,  Laboring over his manuscript.  He finished it on july 16th  And died one week later.  Grant's memoirs sold half a million copies  And restored his family's fortune.  In 1913, the government held a 50th anniversary reunion  At gettysburg.  It lasted three days.  Thousands of survivors  Bivouacked on the old battlefield,  Swapping stories, looking up old comrades.  The climax was to be  A re-enactment of pickett's charge.  As the rebel yell rang out  And the old confederates started forward again  Across the fields,  A moan, "a gigantic gasp of unbelief,"  Rose from the union men on cemetery ridge.  "it was then," one onlooker said,  "that the yankees, unable to restrain themselves longer,  "burst from behind the stone wall  "and flung themselves upon their former enemies,  "not in mortal combat, but embracing them  In brotherly love and affection."  "pageant has passed.  "the day is over, but we linger,  "loath to think we shall see them no more together--  These men, these horses, these colors afield."  Joshua lawrence chamberlain.  Joshua lawrence chamberlain was at the gettysburg reunion,  Still imposing at 83, despite almost constant pain  From the unhealed internal damage done him  By a confederate minie ball at petersburg.  The reunion was, he said, a transcendental experience,  "a radiant fellowship of the fallen."  He had received the medal of honor  For his courage at little round top,  Served four terms as governor of maine,  Then became president of bowdoin college,  Where he managed to teach every subject in the curriculum  Except mathematics.  He died of his ancient wound in 1914.  The war was over.  Who won the war?  The union army obviously won the war  In the sense that they were the army left standing  And holding their weapons  When it was all over.  So the soldiers who fought in the union army,  The generals who directed it,  The president who led the country during it  Won the war.  If we're not talking just about the series of battles  That finished up with the surrender at appomattox,  But talking instead about the struggle  To make something higher and better out of the country,  Then the question gets more complicated.  The slaves won the war and they lost the war  Because they won freedom, that is, the removal of slavery,  But they did not win freedom as they understood freedom.  I suppose that slavery  Is merely the horrible statutory expression  Of a deeper rift between people based on race,  And that is what we struggle still to heal.  And i think the significance of lincoln's life  And his victory  Was that we will never again  Enshrine these concepts into law,  But now let's see what we can do to erase them  From the hearts and minds of people.  The civil war  Is not only the central event of american history,  But it's a central event for the world itself.  If we believe, today, in the 20th century,  That popular government is the way to go,  It is the way  For the emancipation of the human spirit,  Then the civil war established the fact  That a popular government could survive  And overcome an internal secession movement  That could destroy it.  So the war becomes a testament  For the liberation of the human spirit for all time.  Four million americans had been freed  After four years of agony,  But the meaning of freedom in american life  Remained unresolved.  "emancipated slaves own nothing,"  One tennessee planter wrote,  "because nothing but freedom has been given them."  Thousands of blacks wandered southern roads  Searching for relatives or looking for work or food.  Thousands more stayed on their plantations  As hired hands or sharecroppers.  The 13th amendment  Was followed by a 14th and a 15th,  Promising full citizenship  And due process for all american men,  White and black.  But the promises were soon overlooked  In the scramble for a new prosperity,  And white supremacy was brutally reimposed  Throughout the old confederacy.  The white south won that war of attrition.  It would take another century  Before blacks gained back the ground  For which so many had given their lives.  [barbara fields] i think what we need to remember most of all  Is that the civil war is not over  Until we, today, have done our part in fighting it,  As well as understanding what happened  When the civil war generation fought it.  William faulkner said once  That history is not "was," it's "is,"  And what we need to remember about the civil war  Is that the civil war  Isin the present as well as the past.  The generation that fought the war,  The generation that argued over the definition of the war,  The generation that had to pay the price in blood,  That had to pay the price in blasted hopes  And a lost future,  Also established a standard that will not mean anything  Until we have finished the work.  You can say slavery doesn't exist anymore.  We're all citizens.  But if we're all citizens, then we have a task to do  To make su that that, too, is not a joke.  If some citizens live in houses and others on the street,  The civil war is still going on.  It's still to be fought,  And regrettably, it can still be lost.  Â™ªâ™ª we're camping tonight â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª on the old campground â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª give us a song to cheer â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª our  America's most famous battleground is a camp again  With a road dividing the blue and gray.  There's no other dividing line now  As 2,500 veterans gather from north and south  To mark the 75th anniversary of america's armageddon.  Hello.  Hello. How are you?  Glad to see you.  Ha ha ha! You're all right.  Woo! Woo! Woo!  Woo! Woo! Woo!  Ha ha ha!  That's the rebel yell.  We think that we are  A wholly superior people.  If we'd been as superior as we think we are,  We wouldn't have fought that war,  But since we did, we have to make it the greatest war  With the greatest generals of all time.  It's very american to do that.  [drum beating]  [drum beating stops]  In time, even death itself might be abolished.  Sergeant barry benson, a south carolina veteran  From mcgowen's brigade, wilcox's division,  A.p. hill's corp, army of northern virginia,  He had enlisted three months before sumter,  At age 18, and served through appomattox--  Saw it so when he got around to composing the reminiscences  He hoped would "go down amongst my descendants  For a long time."  Reliving the war in words,  He began to wish he could relive it in fact.  He came to believe that he and his fellow soldiers,  Gray and blue,  Might one day be able to do just that,  If not here on earth, then afterwards in valhalla.  "who knows?" he asked, as his narrative concluded,  "but it may be given to us, after this life,  "to meet again in the old quarters,  "to play chess, answer the morning roll call,  "to fall in, while drums tap, for drill and dress parade,  "and to hastily don war gear  "while the monotonous patter of the long roll  "summons us to battle.  "who knows, but again the old flags, ragged and torn,  "snapping in the wind, may face each other and flutter,  "pursuing and pursued,  "while the cries of victory fill a summer day.  "and after the battle,  "then the slain and wounded will arise  "and all meet together under the two flags.  "there will be talking and laughter and cheers,  "and all will say, did it not seem real?  Was it not as in the old days?"  Â™ªâ™ª we are â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª we are â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª climbing â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª climbing â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª jacob's â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª jacob's ladder â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª ladder â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª oh, we are â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª we are â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª climbing â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª jacob's ladder... Â™ªâ™ª â™ªâ™ª jâ™ªâ™ª climbing â™ªâ™ªâ™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª higher...higher... Â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª every â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª every â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª round goes â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª higher â™ªâ™ªs â™ªâ™ª â™ªâ™ª round goes â™ªâ™ª â™ªâ™ªound â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª higher â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª oh... Â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª soldiers â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª soldiers â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª of the cross â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª think i'll â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª think i'll â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª make a christian soldier? Â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª think i'll â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª think i'll â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª make a christian soldier? Â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª make a â™ªâ™ªl â™ªâ™ª â™ªâ™ª soldier â™ªâ™ª â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª soldier â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª soldier â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª of the cross? Â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª rise â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª rise â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª shine â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª shine â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª give god your glory â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª give god your glory â™ªâ™ª g lory â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª rise â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª rise â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª shine â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª shine â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª give god your glory â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª give god your glory â™ªâ™ª â™ªâ™ª shine â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª glory â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª soldiers of the cross â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª keep on â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª keep on â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª climbing â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª climbing â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª we will â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª we will surely make it â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª keep on â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª keep on â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª climbing â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª climbing â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª we will â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª we will surely make it â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª we will â™ªâ™ªâ™ª â™ªâ™ª we will make it â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª soldiers of the cross â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª want your freedom? Â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª freedom â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª children â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª tell me â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª want your freedom? Â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª want your freedom? Â™ªâ™ª â™ªâ™ª do you â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªross â™ªâ™ª  Â™ªâ™ª soldiers of the cross â™ªâ™ªâ™ªâ™ª |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |